Vet A3 f. 448

Vet A3 f. 448

Edward THE [illegible]

Whole Duty of Man,

Laid down

In a Plain and Familiar Way for the Use of All, but especially the *Meanest Reader*.

Divided into XVII. Chapters;

One whereof being read every Lord's Day, the Whole may be Read over Thrice in the Year.

Necessary for all Families.

WITH

PRIVATE DEVOTIONS For several OCCASIONS.

LONDON,

Printed by *R. Norton* for *George Fawler*, at the Sign of the Bible in *Chancery Lane*, near *Fleetstreet*, 16[illegible]

Wm Peckover

1419. f. 218

Robert Shaw Stetton

Book No

BODLEIAN LIBRARY
4 DEC 86
OXFORD.

Wm Peckover
Book

Alice Godard

To the Bookseller.

SIR,

YOU needed not any intercession to recommend this Task to me which brought its Invitations and Reward with it. I very willingly read over all the sheets, both of the *Discourse*, and the *Devotions* annext, and find great cause to bless God for both, not discerning what is wanting in any part of either, to render it with God's blessing, most sufficient, and proper to the great End designed, the Spiritual supplies and advantages of all those that shall be exercised therein. The subject matter of it, is indeed, what the Title undertakes, *The Whole Duty of Man*, set down in all the Branches, with *Those* advantages of brevity and Partitions, to invite, and support, and engage the Reader, *That* Condescension to the meanest capacities, but withal, *That* weight of spiritual arguments, where-

in the beſt Proficients will be glad to be aſſiſted, that it ſeems to me equally fitted for both ſorts of Readers, which ſhall bring with them a ſincere deſire of their own, either preſent or future advantages. The *Devotion-part* in the Concluſion is no way inferior, being a ſeaſonable aid to every Man's Infirmities, and hath extended it ſelf very particularly to all our principal concernments. The *Introduction* hath ſupplied the place of a *Preface*, which you ſeem to deſire from me, and leaves me no more to add, but my *Prayers* to *God*, " That the Author which hath taken " care to convey ſo liberal an Alms to " the *Corban ſo ſecretly*, may not miſs to " be rewarded *openly*, in the viſible po- " wer, and benefit of this work, on the " hearts of the whole Nation, which " was never in more need of ſuch ſup- " plies, as are here afforded. That his All-ſufficient Grace will bleſs the ſeed ſown, and give an abundant encreaſe, is the humbleſt requeſt of

Your aſſured Friend.

March 7. 1657. H. HAMMOND.

A

PREFACE

To the enſuing

TREATISE,

Shewing

The Neceſſity of Caring for the Soul.

Sect. 1. *THE only intent of this enſuing* Treatiſe, *is to be a ſhort and* Plain Direction to the very meaneſt Readers, *to behave themſelves ſo in this world, that they may be happy for ever, in the next. But becauſe 'tis in vain to tell men their Duty, till they be perſwaded of the neceſſity of performing it, I ſhall, before I proceed to the* Particulars *required of every Chriſtian, endeavour to win them to the* Practice *of one* general *Duty* preparatory *to all the reſt; and that is the Conſideration and* CARE *of their own* SOULS, *without which they will never think themſelves much concerned in the other.*

2. MAN, *we know, is made up of two*

parts, a BODY *and a* SOUL: *The Body only the huſk or ſhell of the Soul, a lump of fleſh, ſubject to many Diſeaſes and pains while it lives, and at laſt to* Death *it ſelf; and then 'tis ſo far from being valued, that 'tis not to be endured above ground, but laid to rot in the earth. Yet to this viler part of us we perform a great deal of Care; all the labour and toil we are at, is to maintain that. But the more precious part, the* Soul, *is little thought of, no care taken how it fares, but as if it were a thing that nothing concern'd us, is left quite neglected, never conſider'd by us.*

3. *This* Careleſneſs *of the* Soul *is the root of all the ſin we commit, and therefore whoſoever intends to ſet upon a Chriſtian courſe, muſt in the firſt place amend that. To the doing whereof, there needs no deep learning, or extraordinary parts; the ſimpleſt man living (that is not a* natural fool) *hath underſtanding enough for it, if he will but act in this by the ſame* rules *of common* Reaſon, *whereby he proceeds in his worldly buſineſs. I will therefore now briefly ſet down ſome of thoſe* Motives, *which uſe to ſtir up our care of any outward thing, and then apply them to the Soul.*

4. *There be* FOUR *things eſpecially, which uſe to awake our care; the* firſt *is the* Worth *of the thing, the* ſecond *the* Uſefulneſs *of it to us, when we cannot part with it with-*

out

out great damage and miſchief, the Third the great Danger of it, and the Fourth the Likelihood that our care will not be in vain, but that it will preſerve the thing cared for.

The worth of the Soul.

5. For the Firſt, we know our care of any worldly thing is anſwerable to the Worth of it; what is of greateſt Price, we are moſt watchful to preſerve, and moſt fearful to loſe; no man locks up dung in his cheſt, but his money, or what he counts precious, he doth. Now in this reſpect the Soul deſerves more care, than all the things in the world beſides, for 'tis infinitely more worth; firſt, in that it is made after the Image of God, it was God that breathed into man this breath of life, Gen. 2. 7. Now God being of the greateſt Excellency and worth, the more any thing is like him, the more it is to be valued. But 'tis ſure that no Creature upon the earth is at all like God, but the Soul of man, and therefore nothing ought to have ſo much of our care. Secondly, the Soul never Dies. We uſe to prize things according to their Durableneſs: what is moſt Laſting is moſt Worth. Now the Soul is a thing that will laſt for ever: when Wealth, Beauty, Strength, nay, our very Bodies themſelves fade away, the Soul ſtill continues. Therefore in that reſpect alſo, the Soul is of the greateſt worth; and then what ſtrange madneſs is it for us to neglect

them as we do? We can ſpend Days, and Weeks, and Months, and Years, nay, our whole Lives in hunting after a little wealth of this world, which is of no durance or continuance, and in the mean time let this great durable treaſure, our Souls, *be ſtollen from us by the* Devil.

The miſery of loſing the Soul.

6. *A ſecond* Motive *to our care of any thing, is the* USEFULNES *of it to us, or the great Miſchief we ſhall have by the* loſs *of it. Common reaſon teaches us this in all things of this life. If our Hairs fall we do not much regard, becauſe we can be well enough without them: But if we are in danger to loſe our Eyes or Limbs, we think all the care we can take, little enough to prevent it, becauſe we know it will be a great miſery. But certainly there is no Miſery to be compared to that miſery that follows the Loſs of the Soul. 'Tis true, we cannot loſe our Souls, in one ſence, that is, ſo loſe them, that they ſhall ceaſe to Be; but we may loſe them in another, that we ſhould wiſh to loſe them even in that; That is, we may loſe that happy eſtate, to which they were created, and plunge them into the extreameſt miſery. In a word, we may loſe them in* Hell, *whence there is no fetching them back, and ſo they are loſt for ever. Nay, in this conſideration our very* bodies *are concerned, thoſe Darlings of*

ours,

ours, for which all our care is laid out: for they must certainly after Death be Raised again, and be joyned again to the Soul, *and take part with it in whatever state; if then our care for the* body *take up all our Time and Thoughts, and leave us none to bestow on the poor* Soul, *it is sure the* Soul *will for want of that care be made for ever Miserable. But it is as sure, that that very* Body *must be so too. And therefore if you have any true kindness to your* Body, *shew it by taking Care for your* Souls. *Think with your selves, how you will be able to endure* Everlasting Burnings. *If a small spark of fire, lighting on the least part of the body, be so intolerable, what will it be to have the Whole cast into the hottest flames? And that not for some few hours or days, but for ever? So that when you have spent many* Thousands *of years in that unspeakable Torment, you shall be no nearer coming out of it, than you were the First day you went in: think of this, I say, and think this withal, that this will certainly be the end of Neglecting the* Soul, *and therefore afford it some care, if it be but in pity to the* Body, *that must bear a part in its Miseries.*

7. *The* Third Motive *to the care of any thing, is its being in* DANGER; *now a thing may be in danger two wayes: first, by* Enemies *from without: This is the Case of*

The danger the Soul is in.

the Sheep, *which is ſtill in danger of being devoured by* Wolves; *and we know that makes the Shepherd ſo much the more watchful over it. Thus it is with the Soul, which is in a great deal of danger, in reſpect of its* enemies: *thoſe we know are the* World, *the* Fleſh, *and the* Devil; *which are all ſuch noted enemies to it, that the very firſt Act we do in behalf of our* Souls, *is to Vow a continual war againſt them. This we all do in our* Baptiſm; *and whoever makes any truce with any of them, is falſe not only to his Soul, but to his* Vow *alſo; becomes a forſworn creature: A Conſideration well worthy our laying to heart. But that we may the better underſtand, what Danger the Soul is in, let us a little conſider the* quality *of theſe enemies.*

8. *In a war, you know, there are divers things that make an Enemy terrible: The firſt is* Subtilty *and Cunning, by which alone many victories have been won; and in this reſpect the* Devil *is a dangerous adverſary; he long ſince gave ſufficient proof of his* Subtilty, *in beguiling our firſt Parents, who yet were much wiſer than we are; and therefore no wonder if he deceive and cheat us.* Secondly, *the* Watchfulneſs *and* Diligence *of an* Enemy *makes him the more to be Feared; and here the* Devil *exceeds: it is his trade and buſineſs to deſtroy us, and he is no loiterer at it,* he goes up and down

ſeeking

ſeeking whom he may devour, 1 Pet. 5. 8. *he watches all Opportunities of Advantage againſt us, with ſuch diligence, that he will be ſure never to let any ſlip him.* Thirdly, an Enemy *near us is more to be feared than one at a* Diſtance: *for if he be far off, we may have time to arm, and prepare our ſelves againſt him, but if he be near, he may ſteal on us unawares. And of this ſort is the* fleſh, *it is an Enemy, at our Doors, ſhall I ſay? nay in our Boſoms, it is always near us, to take occaſion of doing us miſchiefs.* Fourthly, *the* Baſer *and* Falſer *an* Enemy *is, the more dangerous. He that hides his malice under the ſhew of Friendſhip, will be able to do a great deal the more hurt. And this again is the fleſh, which like* Joab *to* Abner, 2 Sam. 3. 27. *pretends to ſpeak* peaceably *to us,* but wounds us to death; *'tis forward to purvey for Pleaſures and Delights for us, and ſo ſeems very kind, but it has a* hook *under that* bait, *and if we bite at it we are loſt.* Fifthly, *the Number of* Enemies *makes them more Terrible; and the* World *is a vaſt Army againſt us: There is no ſtate or condition in it, nay, ſcarce a creature which doth not at ſome time or other fight againſt the Soul: The* Honours *of the world ſeek to wound us by* pride, *the* Wealth *by* covetouſneſs, *the* Proſperity *of it tempts us to forget* God, *the* Adverſities *to* murmur *at*

him.

him. Our very Table becomes a ſnare *to us, our meat draws us to* Gluttony, *our drink to* Drunkenneſs, *our* Company, *nay, our neareſt* Friends *often bear a part in this War againſt us, whilſt either by their example, or perſwaſions they intice us to ſin.*

9. *Conſider all this, and then tell me, whether a Soul thus beſet hath leiſure to* ſleep: *even* Dalilah *could tell* Samſon, *it was time to* awake *when the* Philiſtines were upon him. *And* CHRIST *tells us,* If the good man of the houſe had known in what hour the Thief would come, he would have watched, and not have ſuffered his houſe to be broken up, *Matt.* 24. 43. *But we live in the midſt of thieves, and therefore muſt look for them every hour, and yet who is there among us, that hath that common providence for this precious part of him, his Soul, which he hath for his houſe, or indeed the meaneſt thing that belongs to him? I fear our Souls may ſay ſo to us, as Chriſt to his Diſciples,* Matt. 26. 40. What? could ye not watch with me one hour? *For I doubt it would poſe many of us to tell when we beſtowed one Hour on them, though we know them to be continually beſet with moſt dangerous Enemies. And then, alas! what is like to be the caſe of theſe poor Souls, when their Adverſaries beſtow ſo much Care and diligence to deſtroy them, and we will afford none to preſerve them?*

them? Surely the ſame as of a Beſieged Town, where no Watch or Guard is kept, which is certain to fall a prey to the Enemy. Conſider this ye that forget God, *nay, ye that forget your ſelves, leſt* he pluck you away, and there be none to deliver you, *Pſal.* 50. 22.

10. *But I told you there was a* Second *way, whereby a thing may be in Danger, and that is from ſome Diſorder or Diſtemper within it ſelf. This is often the caſe of our* Bodies, *they are not only lyable to outward Violence, but they are within themſelves Sick and Diſeaſed. And then we can be ſenſible enough that they are in danger, and need not to be taught to ſeek out for means to recover them. But this is alſo the caſe of the* Soul, *we reckon thoſe parts of the body* diſeaſed, *that do not rightly perform their* office; *we account it a ſick palate that taſtes not aright, a ſick ſtomach that digeſts not. And thus it is with the* Soul *when its parts do not rightly perform their* Offices.

11. *The parts of the* Soul *are eſpecially theſe three: The* UNDERSTANDING, *the* WILL, *and the* AFFECTIONS. *And that theſe are diſordered, there needs little proof; let any man look ſeriouſly into his own Heart, and conſider how little it is he knows of ſpiritual things, and then tell me whether his* Underſtanding *be not dark? How much apter is he to* Will evil *than* good, *and then tell me whether*

ther his Will *be not* Crooked? *And how ſtrong* Deſires *he hath after the pleaſures of ſin, and what* cold *and* faint *ones towards God and goodneſs, and then tell me whether his* Affections *be not* diſordered, *and rebellious even againſt the voice of his own reaſon within him? Now as in bodily diſeaſes, the firſt ſtep to the cure is to know the cauſe of the ſickneſs; ſo likewiſe here it is very neceſſary for us to know how the* Soul *firſt fell into this* Diſeaſed condition, *and that I ſhall now briefly tell you.*

The firſt Covenant.

12. GOD *created the firſt Man* Adam *without* Sin, *and indued his* Soul *with the full* knowledge *of his* Duty; *and with ſuch a ſtrength, that he might, if he would, perform all that was required of him. Having thus created him, he makes a* COVENANT *or agreement with him to this purpoſe, that if he* continued *in* Obedience *to* God *without committing Sin; then firſt, that* Strength *of* Soul, *which he then had, ſhould ſtill be continued to him; and* ſecondly, *that he ſhould never die, but be taken up into* Heaven, *there to be Happy for ever. But on the other ſide, if he committed Sin and diſobeyed God, then both He and all his Children after him ſhould loſe that Knowledge and that* perfect Strength, *which enabled him to do all that God required of him: and* ſecondly, *ſhould be ſubject to*

death,

death, *and not only ſo, but to Eternal damnation in Hell.*

13. *This was the* Agreement *made with* Adam *and all* Mankind *in him (which we uſually call the* FIRST COVENANT) *upon which God gave* Adam *a particular* commandment, *which was no more but this, that he ſhould not eat of* one *only* tree *of that* Garden *wherein he had placed him. But he by the perſwaſion of the Devil eats of that Tree, diſobeys God, and ſo brings that curſe upon himſelf, and all his poſterity. And ſo by that one* Sin *of his, he loſt both the full* knowledge *of his Duty, and the* Power *of* performing *it. And we being born after his* Image, *did ſo likewiſe, and ſo are become both* Ignorant *in diſcerning what we ought to Do, and* Weak *and unable to the doing of it, having a backwardneſs to all* good, *and an aptneſs, and readineſs to all evil; like a ſick* ſtomach, *which loaths all wholeſome food, and longs after ſuch traſh, as may nouriſh the diſeaſe.*

14. *And now you ſee where we got this ſickneſs of ſoul, and likewiſe that it is like to prove a deadly one, and therefore I preſume I need ſay no more, to aſſure you our Souls are in danger. It is more likely you will from this deſcription think them hopeleſs. But that you may not from that conceit excuſe your Neglect of them, I ſhall haſten to ſhew you the contrary,*

by

by proceeding to the fourth *Motive of Care.*

That our Care will not be in vain.

15. *That* Fourth Motive *is the* likelihood, *that our* CARE *will not be in* VAIN, *but that it will be a means to preſerve the thing cared for; where this is wanting, it diſheartens our care. A Phyſician leaves his* Patient *when he ſees him paſt* Hope, *as knowing it is then in vain to give him any thing: but on the contrary when he ſees hope of recovery, he plies him with Medicines. Now in this very reſpect we have a great deal of reaſon to take care of our Souls, for they are not ſo far gone, but they may be recovered, nay, it is certain they will, if we do our parts towards it.*

16. *For though by that ſin of* Adam *all Mankind were under the ſentence of eternal condemnation, yet it pleaſed God ſo far to pity our miſery, as to give us his Son, and in him to make a new Covenant with us, after we had broken the firſt.*

The ſecond Covenant.

17. *This* SECOND COVENANT *was made with* Adam *and us in him, preſently after his Fall, and is briefly contained in thoſe words,* Gen. 3. 15. *Where God* declares, that THE SEED OF THE WOMAN SHALL BREAK THE SERPENT's HEAD; *and this was made up, as the firſt was, of ſome mercies to*

be

be afforded by God, and ſome duties to be performed by us.

18. *God therein promiſes to ſend his only* Son, *who is* God equal *with himſelf, to earth, to become* man like unto us in all things, ſin only excepted, *and he to do for us theſe ſeveral things.*

19. Firſt, *to make* known *to us the* whole Will *of his* Father; *in the performance whereof we ſhall be ſure to be accepted and rewarded by him. And this was one great part of his buſineſs, which he performed in thoſe many Sermons and Precepts we find ſet down in the* Goſpel. *And herein he is our* PROPHET, *it being the work of a* Prophet *of old not only to* foretel, *but to* Teach. *Our duty in this particular is to hearken diligently to him, to be moſt ready and deſirous to learn that will of God which he came from Heaven to reveal to us.*

20. *The* Second *thing He was to do for us, was to* Satisfie God *for our* Sins, *not only that one of* Adam, *but all the Sins of all Mankind that truly repent and amend, and by this means to obtain for us Forgiveneſs of Sins, the Favour of God, and ſo to Redeem us from Hell and eternal damnation, which was the puniſhment due to our ſin. All this he did for us by his death. He offered up himſelf a Sacrifice for the* Sins of all thoſe *who heartily bewail, and forſake them. And in this He is our* PRIEST,

it being the Prieſt's *Office to* Offer Sacrifice for the ſins of the People. *Our duty in this particular is firſt, truly and heartily to Repent us of, and forſake our ſins, without which they will never be forgiven us, though Chriſt have died.* Secondly, *ſtedfaſtly to* Believe, *that if we do that, we ſhall have the benefits of that* Sacrifice *of his; all our ſins, how many and great ſoever, ſhall be forgiven us, and we ſaved from thoſe eternal puniſhments which were due unto us for them.* Another *part of the* PRIEST's Office *was* Bleſſing *and* Praying *for the People; and this alſo Chriſt performs to us. It was his ſpecial Commiſſion from his Father to Bleſs us, as S.*Peter *tells us,* Acts 3.26. God ſent his Son Jeſus to bleſs you; *and the following words ſhew wherein that bleſſing conſiſts, in* turning away every one of you from his iniquity: *thoſe means which he has uſed for the turning us from our Sins, are to be reckoned of all other the greateſt Bleſſings; and for the other part, that of* Praying, *that he not only performed on earth, but continues ſtill to do it in Heaven,* He ſits on the right hand of God, and makes requeſt for us, *Rom.* 8. 34. *Our duty herein is, not to reſiſt this unſpeakable bleſſing of his, but to be willing to be thus bleſt in the being* turned from our ſins, *and not to make void and fruitleſs all his* Prayers *and* Interceſsions *for us, which will never prevail for us, whileſt we continue in them.*

21. *The*

21. *The* third *thing, that* Chriſt *was to do for us, was to* Enable *us, or give us* Strength *to do what God requires of us. This he doth,* firſt, *by taking off from the hardneſs of the Law given to* Adam, *which was, never to commit the leaſt ſin, upon pain of damnation, and requiring of us only an* honeſt *and* hearty endeavour *to do what we are able, and where we fail, accepting of* Sincere Repentance. Secondly, *By ſending his* Holy Spirit into our hearts *to govern and rule us, to give us ſtrength to overcome Temptations to Sin, and to do all that He now under the Goſpel requires of us. And in this he is our* KING, *it being the office of a* King *to govern and rule, and to ſubdue enemies. Our duty in this particular is to give up our ſelves obedient ſubjects of his, to be governed and ruled by him, to obey all his Laws, not to take part with any Rebel, that is, not to cheriſh any one ſin, but diligently to Pray for his* Grace *to enable us to ſubdue all, and then carefully to make uſe of it to that purpoſe.*

22. Laſtly, *He has purchaſed for all that faithfully* obey *him, an* Eternal glorious *inheritance, the* Kingdom *of* Heaven, *whither he is gone before to take poſſeſſion for us. Our duty herein is to be exceeding careful, that we forfeit not our parts in it, which we ſhall certainly do, if we continue impenitent in any ſin.* Secondly, *not to faſten our* Affections *on this world.*

world, but to raiſe them according to the precept of the Apoſtle, Col. 3. 2. Set your affections on things above, and not on things on the earth; *continually longing to come to the poſſeſſion of that bleſſed Inheritance of ours, in compariſon whereof all things here below ſhould ſeem vile and mean to us.*

23. *This is the Sum of that* SECOND COVENANT *we are now under, wherein you ſee what* Chriſt *hath done, how he Executes thoſe* Three Great Offices *of* KING, PRIEST *and* PROPHET: *as alſo what is required of us, without our faithful Performance of which, all that he hath done, ſhall never ſtand us in any ſtead; for he will never be a* Prieſt *to ſave any, who take him not as well for their* Prophet *to* Teach, *as their* King *to* Rule *them; nay, if we neglect our part of this* Covenant, *our condition will be yet worſe, than if it had never been made; for we ſhall then be to Anſwer, not for the breach of Law only, as in the* firſt, *but for the abuſe of mercy, which is of all ſins the moſt provoking. On the other ſide, if we faithfully perform it, that is, ſet our ſelves heartily to the obeying of every Precept of Chriſt, not going on wilfully in any one ſin, but bewailing and forſaking whatever we have formerly been guilty of, it is then moſt certain, that all the forementioned benefits of Chriſt belong to us.*

24. *And*

24. *And now you ſee how little Reaſon you have, to caſt off the* CARE *of your* SOULS, *upon a conceit they are paſt cure, for that it is plain they are not; Nay certainly they are in that very condition, which of all others makes them fitteſt for our care. If they had not been thus* REDEEMED *by* CHRIST, *they had been then ſo hopeleſs, that care would have been in vain; on the other ſide, if his Redemption had been ſuch that* all *men ſhould be ſaved by it, though they live as they liſt, we ſhould have thought it needleſs to take care for them, becauſe they were ſafe without it. But it hath pleaſed* God *ſo to order it, that our care muſt be the* means, *by which they muſt receive the good even of all that* Chriſt *hath done for them.*

25. *And now if after all that* God *hath done to ſave theſe* Souls *of ours, we will not beſtow a little* Care *on them our ſelves, we very well deſerve to periſh. If a* Phyſician *ſhould undertake a Patient that were in ſome deſperate diſeaſe, and by his skill bring him ſo far out of it, that he were ſure to recover, if he would but take care of himſelf, and obſerve thoſe* rules *the Phyſician ſet him, would you not think that man weary of his life, that* would refuſe to do that? *So certainly that man is* weary *of his* Soul, *wilfully caſts it away, that will not conſent to thoſe eaſie conditions, by which he may ſave it.*

26. *You*

26. *You ſee how great* kindneſs *God hath to theſe Souls of ours, the whole* TRINITY, Father, Son, *and* HOLY Ghoſt *have all done their parts for them. The* FATHER *gave his only Son; the* SON *gave Himſelf, left his Glory, and endured the bitter death of the* Croſs, *meerly to keep our* Souls *from periſhing. The* HOLY GHOST *is become as it were our Attendant, waits upon us with continual offers of his Grace, to enable us to do that which may preſerve them; nay he is ſo deſirous we ſhould accept thoſe Offers of his, that he is ſaid to be* grieved *when we refuſe them,* Epheſ. 4. 30. *Now what greater diſgrace and affront can we put upon God, than to deſpiſe what he thus values? that thoſe Souls of ours, which Chriſt thought worthy every drop of his* bloud, *we ſhould not think worth any part of our* Care? *We uſe in things of the world, to rate them according to the opinion of thoſe who are beſt skilled in them: now certainly* God *who made our* Souls, *beſt knows the* worth *of them, and ſince he prizes them ſo high, let us (if it be but in reverence to him) be aſhamed to neglect them. Eſpecially now that they are in ſo hopeful a condition, that nothing but our own careleſneſs can poſſibly deſtroy them.*

27. *I have now briefly gone over thoſe* Four motives *of care I at firſt propoſed, which are each of them ſuch as never miſſes to ſtir it up towards*

towards the things of this World; and I have alſo ſhewed you how much more Reaſonable, nay, Neceſſary it is they ſhould do the like for the Soul. *And now what can I ſay more, but conclude in the words of* Iſaiah 46. 8. Remember this, and ſhew your ſelves men. *That is, deal with your* Soul *as your* Reaſon *teaches you to do with all other things that concern you. And ſure this common* Juſtice *binds you to; for the Soul is that which furniſhes you with that* Reaſon, *which you exerciſe in all your worldly buſineſs; and ſhall the Soul it ſelf receive no* Benefit *from that* Reaſon *which it affords you? This is, as if a* Maſter *of a* Family, *who provides food for his ſervants ſhould by them be kept from Eating any himſelf, and ſo remain the only ſtarved creature in his houſe.*

28. *And as Juſtice ties you to this, ſo* Mercy *doth likewiſe; you know the poor Soul will fall into Endleſs and unſpeakable Miſeries, if you continue to neglect it, and then it will be too late to conſider it. The laſt Refuge you can hope for, is* God's mercy, *but that you have deſpiſed and abuſed. And with what face can you in your greateſt need beg for* his *mercy to your* Souls, *when you would not afford them your* own? *No not that common* Charity *of conſidering them, of beſtowing a few of thoſe idle* Hours, *you know not (ſcarce) how to paſs away, upon them.*

29. *Lay*

29. *Lay this to your hearts, and as ever you hope for* God's pity, *when you moſt want it, be ſure in time to* pity *your ſelves, by taking that due care of your* Precious Souls *which belongs to them.*

30. *If what hath been ſaid, have perſwaded you to this ſo* neceſſary *a* Duty, *my next work will be to tell you how this* Care *muſt be imployed; and that, in a word, is in the doing of all thoſe things which tend to the making the Soul happy, which is the end of our* Care, *and what thoſe are I come now to ſhew you.*

For more particular Concernments,
See
The Cauſes of the Decay of Chriſtian Piety,
AND
The Gentleman's Calling.
Both written by the Author of this Book.

The WHOLE DUTY of MAN,
being put into ſignificant Latine for the uſe of Schools, is now Printed and Published.

All Sold by G. Pawlet, *at the* Bible *in* Chancery-Lane, *near* Fleetſtreet.

SUNDAY I.

Of the Duty *of* Man *by the Light of Nature, by the Light of Scripture: the three great Branches of Man's Duty, to God, our Selves, our Neighbour: our Duty to God; Of* Faith, *the Promiſes, of Hope, of Love, of Fear, of Truſt.*

THE Benefits purchaſed for us by *Chriſt*, are ſuch as will undoubtedly make the Soul Happy; for eternal Happineſs it ſelf is one of them: but becauſe theſe Benefits belong not to us till we perform the Condition required of us; whoever deſires the happineſs of his Soul, muſt ſet himſelf to the performing of that Condition. What that is, I have already mentioned in the general, *That it is the hearty, honeſt endeavour of obeying the whole will of God.* But then that will of God containing under it many particulars, it is neceſſary we ſhould alſo know what thoſe are; that is, what are the ſeveral things, that God now requires of us, our performance whereof will bring us to everlaſting happineſs, and the neglect to endleſs miſery.

Of the light of Nature.

2. Of theſe things there are ſome which God hath ſo ſtamped upon our ſouls, that we Naturally know them; that is, we ſhould have known them to be our Duty, though we had never been told ſo by the Scripture. That this is ſo, we may ſee by thoſe Heathens, who having never heard of either Old or New Teſtament, do yet acknowledge themſelves bound to ſome general Duties, as to Worſhip God, to be Juſt, to honour their Parents, and the like; and as *S. Paul* ſaith, *Rom.* 2. 15. *Their Conſciences do in thoſe things accuſe or excuſe them*; that is, tell them, whether they have done what they ſhould in thoſe particulars, or no.

3. Now though Chriſt hath brought greater Light into the World, yet he never meant by it to put out any of that Natural light, which God hath ſet up in our Souls: Therefore let me here, by the way, adviſe you not to walk contrary even to this leſſer light, I mean, not to venture on any of thoſe Acts, which mere Natural Conſcience will tell you are ſins.

4. It is juſt matter of ſadneſs to any Chriſtian heart, to ſee ſome in theſe days, who profeſs much of Religion, and yet live in ſuch ſins, as a mere Heathen would abhor; Men that pretending to higher degrees of light and holineſs, than their brethren do, yet practiſe contrary to all the Rules of common honeſty, & make it part of their Chriſtian liberty ſo to do: of whoſe ſeducement it concerns all that love their Souls to beware: and for that purpoſe let this be laid as a Foundation, *That that Religion or Opinion cannot be of God, which allows men in any wickedneſs.*

5. But

5. But though we must not put out this light which God hath thus put into our souls, yet this is not the only way whereby God hath revealed his will; and therefore we are not to rest here, but proceed to the knowledge of those other things which God hath by other means revealed.

The light of Scriptures.

6. The way for us to come to know them is by the Scriptures, wherein are set down those several commands of God which he hath given to be the Rule of our Duty.

7. Of those, some were given before Christ came into the world, such are those precepts we find scattered throughout the Old Testament, but especially contained in the Ten Commandments, and that excellent Book of *Deuteronomy*; others were given by Christ, who added much, both to the Law implanted in us by Nature, and that of the Old Testament; and those you shall find in the New Testament, in the several precepts given by him and his Apostles, but especially in that Divine Sermon on the Mount, set down in the fifth, sixth & seventh Chapters of *S. Matthew*'s Gospel.

8. All these should be severally spoke to, but because that would make the discourse very long, and so less fit for the meaner sort of Men, for whose use alone it is intended, I chuse to proceed in another manner, by summing up all these together, and so as plainly as I can, to lay down what is now the duty of every Christian.

The three great branches of mans Duty.

9. This I find briefly contain'd in the words of the Apostle, *Tit.* 2. 12. *That we should live soberly, righteously, and godly*

in this preſent world; where the word *Soberly*, contains our *duty* to our *ſelves*; *Righteouſly*, our duty to our *neighbour*; and *Godly*, our *duty* to *God*. Theſe therefore ſhall be the Heads of my Diſcourſe, our DUTY to GOD, our SELVES, and our NEIGHBOUR. I begin with that to *God*, that being the beſt ground-work whereon to build both the other.

Duty to God.

10. There are many parts of our DUTY to GOD; the two chief are theſe: Firſt, to acknowledge him to be God; ſecondly, to have no other. Under theſe are contained all thoſe particulars, which make up our whole duty to God, which ſhall be ſhewed in their order.

Acknowledging him to be God.

11. To acknowledge him to be God, is to believe him to be an infinite glorious Spirit, that was from everlaſting, without beginning, and ſhall be to everlaſting, without end. That he is our Creator, Redeemer, Sanctifier, Father, Son, and Holy Ghoſt, one God, bleſſed for ever. That he is ſubject to no alteration, but is unchangeable; that he is no bodily ſubſtance, ſuch as our eyes may behold, but ſpiritual and inviſible, whom *no man hath ſeen, nor can ſee*, as the Apoſtle tells us, 1 *Tim.* 3. 16. That he is infinitely Great and Excellent, beyond all that our wit or conceit can imagine; that he hath received his being from none, and gives being to all things.

12. All this we are to believe of him in regard of his Eſſence and Being: but beſide this, he is ſet forth to us in the *Scripture* by ſeveral *Excellencies*,

cies, as that he is of infinite Goodneſs and Mercy, Truth, Juſtice, Wiſdom, Power, All-ſufficiency, Majeſty; that he diſpoſes and governs all things by his Providence; that he knows all things, and is preſent in all places; theſe are by Divines called the Attributes of God, and all theſe we muſt undoubtedly acknowledge, that is, we muſt firmly believe all theſe Divine Excellencies to be in God, and that in the greateſt degree, and ſo that they can never ceaſe to be in him, he can never be other than *infinitely Good*, *Merciful*, *True*, &c.

13. But the acknowledging him for our God ſignifies yet more than this; it means that we ſhould perform to him all thoſe ſeveral parts of Duty which belong from a Creature to his God: what thoſe are I am now to tell you.

14. The firſt is FAITH, or Belief, not only that forementioned of his Eſſence and Attributes, but of his Word, the believing moſt firmly, that all that he ſaith is perfectly true. This neceſſarily riſes from that Attribute, his Truth, it being natural for us to believe whatſoever is ſaid of one of whoſe truth we are confident. Now the holy Scriptures being the Word of God, we are therefore to conclude, that all that is contained in them is moſt true. *Faith.*

15. The things contained in them are of theſe four ſorts: Firſt, Affirmations, ſuch are all the ſtories of the Bible when it is ſaid, ſuch and ſuch things came ſo and ſo to paſs; Chriſt was born of a Virgin, was laid in a Manger, *&c.* And ſuch alſo are many points of Doctrine, as that there are three Perſons in the *Godhead*, that *Chriſt* *Of his Affirmations.*

is the *Son of God*, and the like. All things of this ſort thus delivered in Scripture we are to believe moſt true. And not only ſo, but becauſe they are all written for our inſtruction; we are to conſider them for that purpoſe, that is, by them to lay that Foundation of Chriſtian knowledge, on which we may build a Chriſtian life.

Commands. 16. The ſecond ſort of things contained in the Scripture, are the *Commands*, that is, the ſeveral things enjoyned us by God to perform; theſe we are to believe to come from him, and to be moſt juſt and fit for him to command: but then this belief muſt bring forth obedience, that what we believe thus fit to be done, be indeed done by us; otherwiſe our belief that they come from him ſerves but to make us more inexcuſable.

Threatnings. 17. Thirdly, the Scripture contains threatnings; many Texts there are which threaten to them that go on in their ſins, the wrath of God, and under that are contained all the puniſhments & miſeries of this life, both ſpiritual and temporal, and everlaſting deſtruction in the life to come. Now, we are moſt ſtedfaſtly to believe, that theſe are God's threats, and that they will certainly be performed to every impenitent ſinner. But then the uſe we are to make of this belief, is to keep from thoſe ſins to which this deſtruction is threatned; otherwiſe our belief adds to our guilt, that will wilfully go on in ſpight of thoſe threatnings.

Promiſes. 18. Fourthly, the Scripture contains Promiſes, and thoſe both to our Bodies and our Souls; for our Bodies there

are

are many promiſes that God will provide for them what he ſees neceſſary, I will name only one, *Mat.* 6. 33. *Seek ye firſt the kingdom of God, and his righteouſneſs, and all theſe things*, that is, all outward neceſſaries, *ſhall be added unto you:* but here it is to be obſerved, that we muſt *firſt ſeek the Kingdom of God and his righteouſneſs*, that is, make it our firſt and greateſt care to ſerve and obey him, before this promiſe even of temporal good things belong to us. To the ſoul there are many and high promiſes, as firſt, that of preſent eaſe and refreſhment, which we find, *Mat.* 11. 29. *Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me, and ye ſhall find reſt to your ſouls:* but here it is apparent, that before this reſt belongs to us, we muſt have *taken on us Chriſt's yoke*, become his ſervants and Diſciples. Finally, there are promiſes to the ſoul even of all the benefits of Chriſt; but yet thoſe only to ſuch as perform the condition required; that is, Pardon of ſins to thoſe that repent of them, Increaſe of Grace to thoſe that diligently make uſe of what they have already, and humbly pray for more; and Eternal Salvation to thoſe that continue to their lives end in hearty obedience to his Commands.

19. This Belief of the Promiſes muſt therefore ſtir us up to perform the Condition, and till it do ſo, we can in no reaſon expect any good by them; and for us to look for the benefit of them on other terms, is the ſame mad preſumption that it would be in a ſervant to challenge his Maſter to give him a reward for having done nothing of his work, to which alone the reward was promiſed; you can eaſily reſolve what anſwer were to be

given to ſuch a ſervant, and the ſame we are to expect from God in this caſe. Nay further, it is ſure, God hath given theſe promiſes to no other end, but to invite us to holineſs of life; yea, he gave his Son, in whom all his promiſes are as it were ſumm'd up, for this end. We uſually look ſo much at Chriſt's coming to ſatisfie for us, that we forget this other part of his errand. But there is nothing ſurer, than that the main purpoſe of his coming into the World was to plant good life among men.

20. This is ſo often repeated in Scripture, that no man that conſiders and believes what he reads can doubt of it. Chriſt himſelf tells us, *Mat.*9.13. *He came to call ſinners to repentance.* And S. *Peter*, *Acts* 3. 26. tells us, *That God ſent his Son Jeſus to bleſs us, in turning every one of us from our iniquities*; for it ſeems the *turning us from our iniquities* was the greateſt ſpecial Bleſſing which God intended us in Chriſt.

21. Nay, we are taught by S. *Paul*, that this was the end of his very death alſo, *Tit.*2.14. *Who gave himſelf for our ſins, that he might redeem us from all iniquity, & purifie to himſelf a peculiar people, zealous of good works.* And again, *Gal.* 1. 4. *Who gave himſelf for us, that he might deliver us from this preſent evil world*, that is, from the ſins and ill cuſtoms of the world. Divers other Texts there are to this purpoſe; but theſe I ſuppoſe ſufficient to aſſure any man of this one great truth, that all that Chriſt hath done for us was directed to this end, the bringing us to live Chriſtianly; or in the words of S. *Paul*, *to teach us, that denying ungodlineſs and worldly luſts, we ſhould live ſoberly, righteouſly and* [illegible] *this preſent world.*

22. Now

22. Now we know Chriſt is the foundation of all the promiſes; *In him all the promiſes of God are yea and Amen*, 2 *Cor.* 1. 20. And therefore if God gave Chriſt to this end, certainly the Promiſes are to the ſame alſo. And then how great an abuſe of them is it to make them ſerve for purpoſes quite contrary to what they were intended? *viz.* to the incouraging us in ſins, which they will certainly do, if we perſwade our ſelves they belong to us, how wickedly ſoever we live. The Apoſtle teaches us another uſe of them, 2 *Cor.* 7. 1. *Having therefore theſe promiſes, let us cleanſe our ſelves from all filthineſs of the fleſh and ſpirit, perfecting holineſs in the fear of God.* When we do thus, we may juſtly apply the promiſes to our ſelves, and with comfort expect our parts in them. But till then, though theſe promiſes be of certain truth, yet we can reap no benefit from them, becauſe we are not the perſons to whom they are made, that is, we perform not the condition required to give us right to them.

23. This is the Faith or Belief required of us towards the things God hath revealed to us in the Scripture, to wit, ſuch as may anſwer the end for which they were ſo revealed, that is, the bringing us to good lives; the bare believing the truth of them, without this, is no more than the Devils do, as S. *James* tells us, Chap. 2. 19. Only they are not ſo unreaſonable as ſome of us are, for they will tremble, as knowing well this Faith will never do them any good. But many of us go on confidently, and doubt not the ſufficiency of our Faith, though we have not the leaſt fruit of obedience to approve it by, let ſuch hear

S. *James's* judgment in the point, Chap. 2.26. *As the body without the ſpirit is dead, ſo Faith if it have not works is dead alſo.*

24. A ſecond duty to God is HOPE, that is, a comfortable expectation of theſe good things he hath promiſed. But this, as I told you before of Faith, muſt be ſuch as agrees to the nature of the promiſes, which being ſuch as requires a condition on our part, we can hope no further than we make that good; or if we do, we are ſo far from performing by it this duty of Hope, that we commit the great ſin of Preſumption, which is nothing elſe but hoping where God hath given us no ground to hope: this every Man doth, that hopes for pardon of ſins and eternal life, without that repentance and obedience to which alone they are promiſed; the true hope is that which purifies us, S. *John* ſaith, 1 *Ep.* 3. 3. *Every man that hath this hope in him, purifieth himſelf, even as he is pure*; that is, it makes him leave his ſins, and earneſtly endeavour to be holy as Chriſt is, and that which doth not ſo, how confident ſoever it be, may well be concluded to be but that hope of the Hypocrite, which *Job* aſſures us ſhall periſh.

Hope.

Preſumption.

25. But there is another way of tranſgreſſing this Duty, beſides that of Preſumption, and that is by deſperation, by which I mean not that which is ordinarily ſo called, *viz.* the deſpairing of mercy, ſo long as we continue in our ſins, for that is but juſt for us to do: but I mean ſuch a deſperation as makes us give over endeavour, that is, when a Man that

Deſpair.

that ſees he is not at the preſent ſuch a one as the promiſes belong to, concludes, he can never become ſuch, and therefore neglects all duty, and goes on in his ſins. This is indeed the ſinful deſperation, and that which if it be continued in, muſt end in deſtruction.

26. Now the work of hope is to prevent this, by ſetting before us the generality of the promiſes, that they belong to all that will but perform the condition. And therefore though a Man have not hitherto performed it, and ſo hath yet no right to them, yet hope will tell him, that that right may yet be gained, if he will now ſet heartily about it. It is therefore ſtrange folly for any Man, be he never ſo ſinful, to give up himſelf for loſt, when if he will but change his courſe, he ſhall be as certain to partake of the promiſes of mercy, as if he had never gone on in thoſe former ſins.

27. This Chriſt ſhews us in the Parable of the Prodigal, *Luke* 15. where we ſee that Son, which had run away from his Father, and had conſumed the portion given him, in riotous living, was yet upon his return and repentance uſed with as much kindneſs by the Father, as he that had never offended, nay with higher and more paſſionate expreſſions of love. The intent of which Parable was only to ſhew us how graciouſly our heavenly Father will receive us, how great ſoever our former ſins have been, if we ſhall return to him with true ſorrow for what is paſt, and ſincere obedience for the time to come; nay ſo acceptable a thing is it to God, to have any ſinner return from the error of his ways, that there is a

kind

kind of Triumph in Heaven for it, *There is joy in the preſence of the Angels of God, over one ſinner that repenteth*, *Luke* 15. 10. And now who would not rather chuſe by a timely repentance, to bring joy to Heaven, to God and his holy Angels, than by a ſullen deſperation to pleaſe Satan and his accurſed ſpirits; eſpecially when by the former we ſhall gain endleſs happineſs to our ſelves, and by the latter as endleſs torments.

Love its Motives.

28. A third duty to God is LOVE; there are two common Motives of love among men. The one the goodneſs and excellency of the perſon, the other his particular kindneſs, and love to us; and both theſe are in the higheſt degree in God.

God's excellency.

29. Firſt he is of infinite goodneſs, and excellency in himſelf; this you were before taught to believe of him, and no Man can doubt it that conſiders but this one thing, that there is nothing good in the World, but what hath received all its goodneſs from God: his goodneſs is as the Sea, or Ocean, and the goodneſs of all Creatures but as ſome ſmall ſtreams flowing from the Sea. Now you would certainly think him a mad man, that ſhould ſay the Sea were not greater than ſome little Brook: and certainly it is no leſs folly to ſuppoſe that the goodneſs of God doth not as much (nay infinitely more) exceed that of all creatures. Beſides, the goodneſs of the creature is imperfect and mixt with much evil; but his is pure and intire without any ſuch mixture. He is perfectly Holy, and cannot be tainted with the leaſt impurity, neither can be the author of any to

us;

us; for though he be the cauſe of all the goodneſs in us, he is the cauſe of none of our ſins. This S. *James* expreſly tells us, Chap. 1. 13. *Let no man ſay when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempteth he any man.*

30. But ſecondly, God is not only thus good in himſelf, but he is alſo wonderful good, that is, kind and merciful to us; we are made up of two parts, a Soul and a Body, and to each of theſe God hath expreſſed infinite mercy and tenderneſs. Do but conſider what was before told you of the SECOND COVENANT, and the mercies therein offered, even Chriſt himſelf and all his benefits, and alſo that he offers them ſo ſincerely and heartily, that no man can miſs of enjoying them but by his own default. For he doth moſt really and affectionately deſire we ſhould embrace them and live; as appears by that ſolemn Oath of his, *Ezek.* 33. 11. *As I live ſaith the Lord, I have no pleaſure in the death of the wicked, but that the wicked turn from his way and live*; whereto he adds this paſſionate expreſſion, *Turn ye, turn ye from your evil ways, for why will ye die?* To the ſame purpoſe you may read *Ezek.* 18. Conſider this, I ſay, and then ſurely you cannot but ſay, he hath great kindneſs to our Souls. Nay, let every Man but remember with himſelf the many calls he hath had to repentance and amendment? ſometimes outward by the Word, ſometimes inward by the ſecret whiſpers of God's Spirit in his heart, which were only to woo and intreat him to avoid Eternal miſery, and to accept of

His kindneſs to us.

of Eternal happineſs; let him, I ſay, remember theſe, together with thoſe many other means God hath uſed toward him for the ſame end, and he will have reaſon to confeſs God's kindneſs, not only to Mens ſouls in general, but to his own in particular.

31. Neither hath he been wanting to our Bodies; all the good things they enjoy, as health, ſtrength, food, raiment, and whatever elſe concerns them, are meerly his gifts: ſo that indeed it is impoſſible we ſhould be ignorant of his mercies to them, all thoſe outward comforts and refreſhments we daily enjoy, being continual effects and witneſſes of it; and though ſome enjoy more of theſe than others, yet there is no perſon but enjoys ſo much in one kind or other, as abundantly ſhews God's mercy and kindneſs to him in reſpect of his Body.

32. And now ſurely you will think it but reaſonable we ſhould Love him, who is in all reſpects thus Lovely: Indeed this is a duty ſo generally acknowledged, that if you ſhould ask any Man the queſtion, whether he loved God or no, he would think you did him great wrong to doubt of it; yet for all this, it is too plain, that there are very few, that do indeed love him; and this will ſoon be proved to you by examining a little, what are the common effects of love, which we bear to Men like our ſelves, and then trying, whether we can ſhew any ſuch fruits of our love to God.

Fruit of Love deſire of pleaſing.

33. Of that ſort there are divers, but for ſhortneſs I will name but two. The firſt is a deſire

deſire of pleaſing, the ſecond a deſire of enjoyment. Theſe are conſtantly the fruits of Love. For the firſt, 'tis known by all, that he that loves any perſon is very deſirous to approve himſelf to him, to do whatſoever he thinks will be pleaſing to him; and according to the degree of love, ſo is this deſire more or leſs; where we love earneſtly, we are very earneſt, and careful to pleaſe. Now if we have indeed that love to God, we pretend to, it will bring forth this fruit, we ſhall be careful to pleaſe him in all things. Therefore as you judge of the *tree by its fruits*, ſo may you judge of your love of God, by this fruit of it; nay indeed this is the way of trial, which Chriſt himſelf hath given us, *John* 14. 15. *If ye love me, keep my Commandments*, and S. *John* tells us, 1 Ep. 5. 3. *That this is the love of God, that we walk after his Commandments*, and where this one proof is wanting, it will be impoſſible to teſtifie our love to God.

34. But it muſt yet be farther conſidered, that this love of God muſt not be in a low or weak degree, for beſides that the motives to it, His Excellency and his kindneſs are in the higheſt, the ſame Commandment which bids us love God, bids us *love him with all our hearts, and with all our ſtrength*, that is, as much as is poſſible for us, and above any thing elſe. And therefore to the fulfilling this Commandment, it is neceſſary we love him in that degree; and if we do ſo, then certainly we ſhall have not only ſome ſlight and faint endeavours of pleaſing, but ſuch as are moſt diligent and earneſt, ſuch as will put us upon the moſt painful and coſtly duties, make us wil-

willing to forſake our own eaſe, goods, friends, yea life it ſelf, when we cannot keep them without diſobeying God.

35. Now examine thy ſelf by this? haſt thou this fruit of love to ſhew? Doſt thou make it thy conſtant and greateſt care to keep God's Commandments? To obey him in all things? Earneſtly labouring to pleaſe him to the utmoſt of thy power, even to the forſaking of what is deareſt to thee in this world? if thou doſt, thou mayeſt then truly ſay thou loveſt God. But on the contrary, if thou wilfully continueſt in the breach of many, nay, but of any one command of his, never deceive thy ſelf, for the love of God abides not in thee. This will be made plain to you, if you conſider what the Scripture ſaith of ſuch, as that they *are enemies to God by their wicked works*, *Col.* 1. 21. That the carnal mind (and ſuch is every one that continues *wilfully in ſin*) is *enmity with God*, *Rom.* 8. 7. That he that *ſins wilfully, tramples under foot the Son of God, and doth deſpight unto the Spirit of Grace*, *Heb.* 10. 29. and many the like. And therefore unleſs you can think enmity, and trampling, and deſpight to be fruits of love, you muſt not believe you love God, whilſt you go on in a wilful diſobedience to him.

Deſire of Enjoying.

36. A ſecond fruit of Love, I told you, was deſire of Enjoying. This is conſtantly to be ſeen in our love to one another. If you have a friend whom you entirely love, you deſire his converſation, wiſh to be always in his company: and thus will it be alſo in our love to God, if that be as great and hearty as this.

37. There

37. There is a twofold Enjoying of God, the one Imperfect in this life, the other more Perfect and compleat in the life to come: that in this life is that converſation, as I may call it, which we have with God in his Ordinances, in Praying and Meditating, in hearing his Word, in receiving the Sacrament, which are all intended for this purpoſe, to bring us into an intimacy and familiarity with God by ſpeaking to him, and hearing him ſpeak to us.

38. Now if we do indeed love God, we ſhall certainly hugely value and deſire theſe ways of converſing with him; it being all that we can have in this life, it will make us with *David*, eſteem *one day in God's courts better than a thouſand*, *Pſal.* 84. 10. we ſhall be glad to have theſe opportunities of approaching to him as often as it is poſſible, and be careful to uſe them diligently, to that end of uniting us ſtill more to him, yea we ſhall come to theſe Spiritual exerciſes with the ſame chearfulneſs we would go to our deareſt friend. And if indeed we do thus, it is a good proof of our Love.

39. But I fear there are not many have this to ſhew for it, as appears by the common backwardneſs and unwillingneſs of men to come to theſe; and their negligence and heartleſneſs when they are at them; and can we think that God will ever own us for lovers of him, whileſt we have ſuch diſlike to his company, that we will never come into it but when we are dragg'd by fear, or ſhame of men, or ſome ſuch worldly Motive? It is ſure you would not think that man loved you, whom you perceive to ſhun your com-

company and be loth to come in your ſight. And therefore be not ſo unreaſonable as to ſay, You love God, when yet you deſire to keep as far from him as you can.

40. But beſides this there is another Enjoyment of God, which is more perfect and compleat, and that is our perpetual enjoying of him in Heaven, where we ſhall be for ever united to him, and enjoy him not now and then only for ſhort ſpaces of time, as we do here, but continually without interruption or breaking off. And certainly if we have that degree of love to God we ought, this cannot but be moſt earneſtly deſired by us ſo much, that we ſhall think no labour too great to compaſs it. The ſeven years that *Jacob* ſerved for *Rachel*, Gen. 29. 20. *ſeemed to him but a few days for the love that he had to her:* And ſurely if we have love to God, we ſhall not think the ſervice of our whole lives too dear a price for this full Enjoyment of him, nor eſteem all the Enjoyments of the World worth the looking on in compariſon thereof.

41. If we can truly tell our ſelves we do thus long for this Enjoyment of God, we may believe we love him. But I fear again there are but few that can thus approve their love. For if we look into Mens lives, we ſhall ſee they are not generally ſo fond of this Enjoyment, as to be at any pains to purchaſe it. And not only ſo, but it is to be doubted, there are many who if it were put to their choice, whether they would live here always to enjoy the profit and pleaſure of the World, or go to Heaven to enjoy God, would like the children of *Gad* and *Reuben*, ſet up their reſt

reſt on this ſide *Jordan*, *Numb.* 32. and never deſire that heavenly *Canaan*; ſo cloſe do their affections cleave to things below, which ſhews clearly they have not made God their treaſure, for then according to our Saviour's Rule, *Matth.* 6. 22. their heart would be with him. Nay, further yet; it is too plain that many of us ſet ſo little value on this enjoying of God, that we prefer the vileſt and baſeſt ſins before him, and chuſe to enjoy them, though by it we utterly loſe our parts in him, which is the caſe of every Man that continues wilfully in thoſe ſins.

42. And now I fear, according to theſe Rules of Trial, many that profeſs to love God, will be found not to do ſo. I conclude all with the words of S. *John*, 1 *Ep.* 3. 18. which though ſpoken of the love of our brethren, is very fitly appliable to this love of God, *Let us not love in word, neither in tongue, but in deed and in truth.*

43. A Fourth duty to God is FEAR; this ariſes from the conſideration both of his juſtice and his power; his juſtice is ſuch that he will not clear the wicked, and his Power ſuch, that he is able to inflict the ſoreſt puniſhments upon them; and that this is a reaſonable cauſe of fear, Chriſt himſelf tells us, *Matth.* 10. 28. *Fear him which is able to deſtroy both ſoul and body in hell.* Many other places of Scripture there are, which commend to us this duty, as *Pſal.* 2. 11. *Serve the Lord with fear*, Pſal. 34. 9. *Fear the Lord ye that be his Saints*, Pro. 9. 10. *The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wiſdom*, and divers the like; and indeed all the threatnings of wrath againſt ſinners, which we meet with in the Scripture, are only to this end, to work this fear in our hearts. *Fear.*

44. Now

44. Now this fear is nothing elſe, but ſuch an awful regard of God, as may keep us from offending him. This the Wiſe man tells us, *Prov.* 16.17. *The fear of the Lord is to depart from evil:* ſo that none can be ſaid truly to fear God, that is not thereby with-held from ſin, and this is but anſwerable to that common fear we have towards men; whoever we know may hurt us, we will beware of provoking; and therefore if we be not as wary of diſpleaſing God, it is plain we fear men more than we do him.

The folly of fearing men more than God.

45. How great a madneſs this is, thus to fear Men above God, will ſoon appear, if we compare what Man can do to us with that which God can. And firſt, it is ſure, it is not in the power of man (I might ſay Devils too) to do us any hurt, unleſs God permit and ſuffer them to do it: ſo that if we do but keep him our friend, we may ſay with the Pſalmiſt, *The Lord is on my ſide, I fear not what man can do unto me.* For let their malice be never ſo great, he can reſtrain and keep them from hurting us; nay he can change their minds towards us, according to that of the Wiſe man, *Prov.* 16.7. *When a man's ways pleaſe the Lord, he maketh even his enemies to be at peace with him.* A notable example of this we have in *Jacob*, *Gen.* 32. who when his Brother *Eſau* was coming againſt him as an enemy, God wonderfully turned his heart, ſo that he met him with all the expreſſions of brotherly kindneſs, as you may read in the next Chapter.

46. But ſecondly, Suppoſe men were left at liberty to do thee what miſchief they could; alas! their power goes but a little way; they may perhaps rob thee of thy goods, it may be they may take away thy liberty or thy credit, or perchance thy life too, but that thou knoweſt is the utmoſt they can do. But now God can do all this when he pleaſes, and that which is infinitely more, his vengeance reaches even beyond death it ſelf, to the Eternal miſery both of Body and Soul in Hell; in compariſon of which, death is ſo inconſiderable, that we are not to look upon it with any dread. *Fear not them that kill the body, and after that have no more that they can do*, ſaith Chriſt, *Luke* 12. 4. and then immediately adds, *But I will forewarn you whom you ſhall fear, fear him which after he hath killed, hath power to caſt into hell, yea, I ſay unto you, fear him.* In which words the compariſon is ſet between the greateſt ill we can ſuffer from Man, the loſs of life, and thoſe ſadder evils God can inflict on us; and the latter are found to be the only dreadful things, and therefore God only to be feared.

47. But there is yet one thing farther conſiderable in this matter, which is this, It is poſſible we may tranſgreſs againſt men, and they not know it: I may perhaps ſteal my neighbours goods, or defile his wife, and keep it ſo cloſe that he ſhall not ſuſpect me, and ſo never bring me to puniſhment for it: but this we cannot do with God, he knows all things, even the moſt ſecret thoughts of our hearts; and therefore though we commit a ſin never ſo cloſely, he is ſure to find us, and will as ſurely if we do not timely repent, puniſh us eternally for it.

48. And

48. And now ſurely it cannot but be confeſt, that it is much ſafer diſpleaſing men, than God; yet, alas, our practice is as if we believed the direct contrary, there being nothing more ordinary with us, than for the avoiding of ſome preſent danger we fear from Men, to ruſh our ſelves upon the indignation of God. And thus it is with us, when either to ſave our eſtates, or credits, or our very lives, we commit any ſin, for that is plainly the chuſing to provoke God, rather than man.

49. But God knows this caſe of fear of men is not the only one wherein we venture to diſpleaſe him; for we commit many ſins, to which we have none of this temptation, nor indeed any other; as for inſtance, that of common ſwearing, to which there is nothing either of pleaſure, or profit to invite us. Nay, many times, we, who ſo fear the miſchiefs that other men may do to us, that we are ready to buy them off with the greateſt ſins, do our ſelves bring all thoſe very miſchiefs upon us, by ſins of our own chuſing. Thus the careleſs Prodigal robs himſelf of his eſtate, the deceitful and diſhoneſt man, or any that lives in open notorious ſin, deprives himſelf of his credit, and the Drunkard and Glutton brings Diſeaſes on himſelf, to the ſhortning his life. And can we think we do at all fear God, when that fear hath ſo little power over us, that though it be backt with the many preſent miſchiefs that attend upon ſin, it is not able to keep us from them? Surely ſuch Men are ſo far from fearing God, that they rather ſeem to defie him, reſolve to provoke him, whatſoever it coſt them,

either

either in this world or the next. Yet ſo unreaſonably partial are we to our ſelves, that even ſuch as theſe will pretend to this fear: you may examine multitudes of the moſt groſs ſcandalous ſinners, before you ſhall meet with one that will acknowledge he fears not God. It is ſtrange it ſhould be poſſible for Men thus to cheat themſelves; but however it is certain we cannot deceive God, he will not be mockt, and therefore if we will not now ſo fear as to avoid ſin, we ſhall one day fear when it will be too late to avoid puniſhment.

Truſt.

50. A fifth duty to God is that of TRUSTING in him, that is, depending and reſting on him: and that is firſt in all dangers, ſecondly in all wants. We are to reſt on him in all our dangers both Spiritual and Temporal. Of the firſt ſort, are all thoſe Temptations, by which we are in danger to be drawn to ſin. And in this reſpect he hath promiſed that if we *reſiſt the Devil, he ſhall flee from us*, Jam. 4. 7. Therefore our duty is firſt to pray earneſtly for God's grace to enable us to overcome the temptation, and ſecondly, to ſet our ſelves carefully to combate with it, not yielding or giving conſent to it in the leaſt degree; and whileſt we do thus, we are confidently to reſt upon God, that his grace will be ſufficient for us, that he will either remove the temptation, or ſtrengthen us to withſtand it.

In all ſpiritual dangers.

51. Secondly, in all outward and Temporal dangers we are to reſt upon him, as knowing that he is able to

In all Temporal.

deliver

deliver us, and that he will do ſo if he ſee it beſt for us, and if we be ſuch to whom he hath promiſed his protection, that is, ſuch as truly fear him. To this purpoſe we have many promiſes in Scripture, *Pſal.* 34. 7. *The Angel of the Lord tarrieth round about them that fear him, and delivereth them:* and *Pſal.* 34. 20. *The Lord delivereth the ſouls of his Saints, and all that put their truſt in him ſhall not be deſtitute*; and divers the like.

Alſo we have many examples, as that of the three children in the Furnace, *Daniel* 3. That of *Daniel* in the Lions Den, *Dan.* 6. and many others; all which ſerve to teach us this one Leſſon, that if we go on conſcionably in performing our duty, we need not be diſmayed for any thing that can befal us, for the God whom we ſerve is able to deliver us.

Not ſeek to deliver our ſelves by any ſin.

52. Therefore in all dangers we are firſt humbly to pray for his aid, and then to reſt our ſelves chearfully on him; and aſſuring our ſelves that he will give ſuch an iſſue as ſhall be moſt for our good. But above all things, we muſt be ſure to fix our dependence wholly on him, and not to rely on the creatures for help; much leſs muſt we ſeek to deliver our ſelves by any unlawful means, that is by the committing of any ſin; for that is like *Saul*, 1 *Sam.* 18. 7. *to go to the witch*, that is, to the *Devil* for help; ſuch courſes do commonly deceive our hopes at the preſent, and inſtead of delivering us out of our ſtraits, plunge us in greater, and thoſe much more uncomfortable ones, becauſe then we want that which is the only

only ſupport, God's favour and aid, which we certainly forfeit, when we thus ſeek to reſcue our ſelves by any ſinful means. But ſuppoſing we could by ſuch a way certainly free our ſelves from the preſent danger; yet alas, we are far from having gained ſafety by it; we have only removed the danger from that which was leſs conſiderable, and brought it upon the moſt precious part of us, our Souls; like an unskilful Phyſician, that to remove a pain from the finger ſtrikes it to the heart; we are therefore groſly miſtaken, when we think we have played the good Huſband in ſaving our Liberties or Eſtates, or Lives themſelves by a ſin; we have not ſaved them, but madly overbought them, laid out our very Souls on them: and Chriſt tells us how little we ſhall gain by ſuch bargains, *Matt.* 16. 26. *What is a man profited if he ſhall gain the whole world and loſe his own ſoul?* Let us therefore reſolve never to value any thing we can poſſeſs in this world at ſo high a rate, as to keep it at the price of the leaſt ſin; but whenever things are driven to ſuch an iſſue, that we muſt either part with ſome, perhaps all our worldly poſſeſſions, nay life it ſelf, or elſe commit ſin, let us then remember, that this is the ſeaſon for us to perform that great and excellent duty of *taking up the Croſs*, which we can never ſo properly do as in this caſe; for our bearing of that which we have no poſſible way of avoiding, can at moſt be ſaid to be but the carrying of the Croſs, but then only can we be ſaid to take it up, when having a means of eſcaping it by a ſin, we rather chuſe to indure the Croſs than commit the Sin; for then it is not laid

on us by any unavoidable neceſſity, but we willingly chuſe it; and this is highly acceptable with God, yea, withal ſo ſtrictly required by him, that if we fail of performing it, when we are put to the trial, we are not to be accounted followers of Chriſt, for ſo himſelf hath expreſly told us, *Matt.*16.24. *If any can come after me, let him deny himſelf, and take up his Croſs and follow me*; and ſo again, *Mark* 8. 34. It were therefore a good point of ſpiritual wiſdom for us, ſometimes by ſome lower degrees of ſelf-denial, to fit our ſelves for this greater, when we ſhall be called to it; we know he that expects to run a Race will before-hand be often breathing himſelf, that he may not be foil'd when he comes to run for the prize; in like manner 'twill be fit for us, ſometimes to abridge our ſelves ſomewhat of our lawful pleaſure, or eaſe, or profit, ſo that we may get ſuch a maſtery over our ſelves, as to be able to renounce all when our obedience to God requires it.

In all wants ſpiritual.

53. And as we are thus to truſt on God for deliverance from danger, ſo are we likewiſe for ſupply of our wants; and thoſe again are either Spiritual or Temporal: our Spiritual want is that of his Grace to enable us to ſerve him, without which we can do nothing; and for this we are to depend on him, provided, we neglect not the means, which are Prayer and a careful uſing of what he hath already beſtowed on us: For then we have his promiſe for it, *He will give the holy Spirit to them that ask it*, *Luke* 11. 15. and *unto him that hath ſhall be given*, *Matth.* 25. 29.

that

that is, *To him that hath made a good uſe of that grace he hath already, God will give more.* We are not therefore to affright our ſelves with the difficulty of thoſe things God requires of us, but remember he commands nothing which he will not inable us to perform, if we be not wanting to our ſelves. And therefore let us ſincerely do our parts, and confidently aſſure our ſelves God will not fail of his.

54. But we have likewiſe Temporal and Bodily wants, and for the ſupply of them we are likewiſe to rely on him. And for this alſo we want no Promiſes, ſuppoſing us to be of the number of them to whom they are made, that is, God's faithful Servants: *They that fear the Lord lack nothing*, Pſal. 34. 9. and ver. 10. *They that ſeek the Lord ſhall want no manner of thing that is good:* again Pſal. 33. 18, 19. *Behold the eye of the Lord is upon them that fear him, upon them that hope in his mercy, to deliver their ſouls from death, and to feed them in time of famine.* Examples alſo we have of this, as we may ſee in the caſe of *Elijah*, and the *poor widow*, 1 *Kings* 17. and many others. *Temporal wants.*

55. We are therefore to look up to him for the proviſion of all things neceſſary for us, according to that of the *Pſalmiſt*, *The eyes of all wait upon thee, O Lord, and thou giveſt them their meat in due ſeaſon.* And our Saviour hath taught us to pray for our *daily bread*; thereby teaching us that we are to live in continual dependance upon God for it. Yet I mean not by this, that we ſhould ſo expect it from God, as to give up our ſelves to idleneſs, and expect to be fed by Miracles. No,

our honeſt induſtry and labour is the means by which God ordinarily gives us the neceſſaries of this life; and therefore we muſt by no means neglect that, *He that will not labour let him not eat*, ſays the Apoſtle, 2 *Theſſ.* 3. 10. And we may believe God will pronounce the ſame ſentence, and ſuffer the ſlothful perſon to want even neceſſary food. But when we have faithfully uſed our own indeavour, then we muſt alſo look up to God for his bleſſing on it, without which it can never proſper to us. And having done thus, we may comfortably reſt our ſelves on his Providence for ſuch a meaſure of theſe outward things as he ſees fitteſt for us.

56. But if our condition be ſuch that we are not able to labour, and have no other means of bringing in the neceſſaries of life to our ſelves, yet even then we are chearfully to reſt upon God, believing that he who feeds the Ravens, will by ſome means or other, though we know not what, provide for us, ſo long as he pleaſes we ſhall continue in this world, and never in any caſe torment our ſelves with carking and diſtruſtful thoughts, but as the Apoſtle, 1 *Pet.* 5. 7. *Caſt all our care on him who careth for us.*

57. This is earneſtly preſt by our Saviour, *Matt.* 6. where he abundantly ſhews the folly of this ſin of diſtruſt. The place is a moſt excellent one, and therefore I ſhall ſet it down at large, Verſe 25. *Therefore I ſay unto you; take no thought for your life, what ye ſhall eat, or what ye ſhall drink neither for your body, what you ſhall put on; Is not the life more than meat, and the body than raiment? Behold the fowls of the Air, for they ſow not, neither*

do

do they reap, nor gather into barns, yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they? Which of you by taking thought can add one cubit to his ſtature? And why take ye thought for raiment? Conſider the Lilies of the field how they grow, they toil not, neither do they ſpin, and yet I ſay unto you, that even Solomon *in all his glory was not arrayed like one of theſe. Wherefore if God ſo cloath the graſs of the field, which to day is, and to morrow is caſt into the Oven, ſhall he not much more cloath you, O ye of little Faith? Therefore take no thought, ſaying, What ſhall we eat? or what ſhall we drink? or wherewithal ſhall we be cloathed? (for after all theſe things do the Gentiles ſeek) for your heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all theſe things. But ſeek ye firſt the Kingdom of God and his righteouſneſs, and then all theſe things ſhall be added unto you. Take therefore no thought for to morrow, for the morrow ſhall take thought for the things of it ſelf; ſufficient unto the day is the evil thereof.* I might add many other texts to this purpoſe, but this is ſo full and convincing, that I ſuppoſe it needleſs.

The benefits of truſting on God.

58. All therefore that I ſhall ſay more concerning this duty, is to put you in mind of the great benefits of it; as firſt, that by this truſting upon God, you ingage and bind him to provide for you. Men, you know, think themſelves highly concern'd not to fail thoſe that depend and truſt upon them; and certainly God doth ſo much more. But then ſecondly, there is a great deal of eaſe and quiet in the practice of this duty, it delivers us from all thoſe carkings

and immoderate cares which diſquiet our minds, break our ſleep, and gnaw even our very heart. I doubt not but thoſe that have felt them, need not be told they are uneaſie. But then methinks that uneaſineſs ſhould make us forward to imbrace the means for the removing of them, and ſo we ſee it too often doth in unlawful ones; men will cheat, and ſteal, and lie, and do any thing to deliver themſelves from the fear of want. But alas, they commonly prove but deceitful remedies; they bring God's curſe on us, and ſo are more likely to betray us to want, than to keep us from it. But if you deſire a certain and unfailing cure for cares; take this of relying upon God.

59. For what ſhould cauſe that man to fear want that knows he hath one that cares for him, who is all-ſufficient, and will not ſuffer him to want what is fit for him? If a poor man had but a faithful promiſe from a wealthy perſon that he would never ſuffer him to want, it is ſure he would be highly cheared with it, and would not then think fit to be as carking as he was before: and yet a man's promiſe may fail us, he may either grow poor and not be able, or he may prove falſe and not be willing to make good his word. But we know God is ſubject neither to impoveriſhing nor deceit. And therefore how vile an injury do we offer to him, if we dare not truſt as much upon his promiſe as we would that of a man? Yea, and how great a miſchief do we do our ſelves by loading our minds with a multitude of vexatious and tormenting cares, when we may ſo ſecurely *caſt our burden upon God*? I conclude this in the words of the Apoſtle, *Phil.* 4. 6. *Be careful*

careful for nothing, but in every thing by prayer and ſupplication with thankſgiving, let your requeſts be made known to God.

SUNDAY II.

Of Humility, of Submiſſion to God's Will, in reſpect of Obedience; of Patience in all ſorts of ſufferings, and of Honour due to God in ſeveral ways, in his Houſe, Poſſeſſion, his Day, Word, Sacraments, &c.

Sect. 1. A SIXTH Duty to God is HUMILITY, that is, ſuch a ſenſe of our own meanneſs and his excellency, as may work in us lowly and unfeigned ſubmiſſion to him: this ſubmiſſion is twofold; firſt, to his Will; ſecondly, to his Wiſdom. *Humility.*

2. The ſubmiſſion to his Will is alſo of two ſorts, the ſubmiſſion either of obedience or patience; that of obedience is our ready yielding our ſelves up to do his Will, ſo that when God hath by his command made known to us what his pleaſure is, chearfully and readily to ſet about it. To enable us to this, humility is exceeding neceſſary; for a proud perſon *Submiſſion to God's will in reſpect of obedience.*

ſon is of all others the unapteſt to obey, and we ſee men never pay an obedience but where they acknowledge the perſon commanding to be ſome way above them, and ſo it is here. If we be not throughly perſwaded that God is infinitely above us, that we are vileneſs and nothing in comparison of him, we ſhall never pay our due obedience.

3. Therefore if ever you mean to obey intirely (as you muſt if ever you mean to be ſaved) get your hearts poſſeſt with the ſenſe of that great unſpeakable diſtance that is between God and you. Conſider him as he is a God of infinite Majeſty and glory; and we poor worms of the earth? he infinite in power, able to do all things, and we able to do nothing, not ſo much as to make one *hair white or black*, as our Saviour ſpeaks, *Mat.* 5.36. He of infinite purity and holineſs and we polluted and defiled, wallowing in all kind of ſins and uncleanneſs; he unchangeable and conſtant, and we ſubject to change and alteration every minute of our lives. He eternal and immortal, and we frail mortals, that whenever he *taketh away our breath we die and are turned again to our duſt*, *Pſalm* 104. 29. Conſider all this, I ſay, and you cannot but acknowledge a wide difference between God and man, and therefore may well cry out with *Job*, after he had approacht ſo near to God, as to diſcern ſomewhat of his excellency, *Job* 42.56. *Now mine eye ſeeth thee, wherefore I abhor my ſelf and repent in duſt and aſhes.*

The great diſtance between God and us.

4. And

4. And even when this Humility hath brought us to obedience, it is not then to be cast off, as if we had no further use of it; for there is still great use, nay necessity of it, to keep us from any high conceits of our performances, which if we once entertain, it will blast the best of them, and make them utterly unacceptable to God; like the strictness of the *Pharisee*, which when once he came to boast of, the *Publican* was preferred before him, *Luke* 18. The best of our works are so full of infirmity and pollution, that if we compare them with that perfection and purity which is in God, we may truly say with the *Prophet*, *All our righteousnesses are as filthy rags*, *Isaiah* 64. 6. and therefore to pride our selves in them, is the same madness, that it would be in a beggar to brag of his apparel, when it is nothing but vile rags and tatters. Our Saviour's precept in this matter must always be remembred, *Luke* 17. 10. *When you have done all those things which are commanded you, say, We are unprofitable servants*; if when we have done all, we must give our selves no better a title, what are we then to esteem our selves, that are so far from doing any considerable part of what we are commanded? Surely that worser name of *slothful* and *wicked servant*, *Matth.* 25. 26. we have no reason to think too bad for us. *The unworthiness of our best works.*

5. A second sort of Submission to His Will, is that of Patience; this stands in suffering his Will, as that of obedience did in acting it, and is nothing else, but a willing and *Submission in respect of Patience.*

quiet yielding to whatever afflictions it pleaſes God to lay upon us. This the forementioned humility will make eaſie to us, for when our hearts are throughly poſſeſt with that reverence and eſteem of God, it will be impoſſible for us to grudge or murmur at whatever he does. We ſee an inſtance of it in Old *Eli*, 1 *Sam.* 3. who after he had heard the ſad threatnings of God againſt him, of the deſtruction of his Family, the loſs of the Prieſthood, the cutting off both his Sons in one Day, which were all of them afflictions of the heavieſt kind, yet this one conſideration that it was the Lord, inabled him calmly and quietly to yield to them; ſaying, *Let him do what ſeemeth him good*, Verſe 18. The ſame effect it had on *David*, in his ſuffering, *Pſalm* 39. 9. *I was dumb, I opened not my mouth, becauſe thou didſt it.* God's doing it ſilenced all murmurings and grumblings in him. And ſo muſt it do in us, in all our afflictions, if we will indeed approve our humility to God.

6. For ſurely you will not think that child hath due humility to his Parent, or that ſervant to his Maſter, that when they are corrected, ſhall flie in the Father's or Maſter's face. But this do we whenever we grudge and repine at that which God lays upon us. But beſides the want of Humility in our ſo doing, there is alſo a great want of juſtice in it; for God hath, as we are his creatures, a Right to do with us what he will, and therefore for us to reſiſt that right of his, is the higheſt injuſtice that can be; nay, farther, it is alſo the greateſt folly in the World, for it is only our good that God aims at in afflicting us; that hea-

heavenly Father is not like our earthly ones, who ſometimes correct their children only to ſatisfie their own angry humour, not to do them good. But this is ſubject to no ſuch frailties, *He doth not afflict willingly, nor grieve the children of men*, *Lam.* 3. 33. They are our ſins which do not only give him juſt cauſe, but even force and neceſſitate him to puniſh us. He carries to us the bowels and affections of the tendereſt Father: now when a Father ſees his child ſtubborn, and rebellious, and running on in a courſe that will certainly undo him, what greater act of Fatherly kindneſs can he do than chaſten and correct him; to ſee if by that means he may amend him? nay indeed he could not be ſaid to have true kindneſs to him if he ſhould not. And thus it is with God when he ſees us run on in ſin, either he muſt leave off to love us, and ſo leave us to our ſelves to take our own courſe, and that is the heavieſt curſe that can befal any Man; or elſe if he continue to love us, he muſt correct and puniſh us to bring us to amendment. Therefore whenever he ſtrikes, we are in all reaſon, not only patiently to lie under his rod, but (as I may ſay) kiſs it alſo; that is, be very thankful to him, that he is pleaſed not to *give us over to our own hearts luſts*, Pſal. 18. 12. but ſtill continues his care of us; ſends afflictions as ſo many meſſengers to call us home to himſelf. You ſee then how groſs a folly it is to murmur at thoſe ſtripes which are meant ſo graciouſly; it is like that of a froward Patient, which reproaches and reviles the Phyſician that comes

Thankfulneſs for God's corrections.

comes to cure him, and if ſuch a one be left to die of his diſeaſe, every one knows whom he is to thank for it.

Fruitfulneſs under them.

7. But it is not only quietneſs, no nor thankfulneſs neither under afflictions, that is the full of our Duty in this matter; we muſt have fruitfulneſs alſo, or all the reſt will ſtand us in no ſtead. By fruitfulneſs I mean the bringing forth that, which the afflictions were ſent to work in us, *viz.* the amendment of our lives. To which purpoſe in time of affliction it is very neceſſary for us to call our ſelves to an account, to examine our hearts and lives, and ſearch diligently what Sins lye upon us, which provoked God thus to ſmite us, and whatſoever we find our ſelves guilty of, humbly to confeſs to God, and immediately to forſake for the reſt of our time.

In all ſorts of ſufferings.

8. All I ſhall add concerning this duty of patience, is, that we are as much bound to it in one ſort of ſufferings, as another, whether our ſufferings be ſo immediately from God's hand, that no creature hath any thing to do in it, as ſickneſs, or the like; or whether it be ſuch, wherein men are the inſtruments of afflicting us. For it is moſt ſure when any man doth us hurt, he could not do it without God's permiſſion and ſufferance, and God may as well make them the inſtruments of puniſhing us, as do it more directly by himſelf, and it is but a counterfeit patience that pretends to ſubmit to God, and yet can bear nothing

thing from men; we ſee holy *Job*, who is ſet forth to us as a pattern of true patience, made no ſuch difference in his afflictions; he took the loſs of his Cattel, which the *Chaldeans* and *Sabeans* robb'd him off, with the very ſame meekneſs with which he did that which was conſumed by fire from Heaven. When therefore we ſuffer any thing from men, be it never ſo unjuſtly in reſpect of them, we are yet to confeſs it is moſt juſt in reſpect of God, and therefore inſtead of looking upon them with rage and revenge, as the common cuſtom of the world is, we are to look up to God, acknowledge his Juſtice in the affliction, begging his pardon moſt earneſtly for thoſe ſins, which have provoked him to ſend it, and patiently and thankfully bear it, till he ſhall ſee fit to remove it; ſtill ſaying with *Job*, *Bleſſed be the name of the Lord.*

9. But I told you Humility contained in it a ſubmiſſion not only to his Will, but alſo to his Wiſdom; that is, to acknowledge him infinitely Wiſe, and therefore that whatever he doth, is beſt and fitteſt to be done. And this we are to confeſs both in his commands, and in his Diſpoſing and ordering of things. Firſt, whatſoever he commands us either to believe or do, we are to ſubmit to his Wiſdom in both, to believe whatſoever he bids us believe, how impoſſible ſoever it ſeems to our ſhallow underſtandings, and to do whatever he commands us to do, how contrary ſoever it be to our fleſhly Reaſon or humour, and in both to conclude, that

Submiſſion to God's wiſdom.

In his commands.

that his Commands are moſt fit and reaſonable, however they appear to us.

In his diſpoſals.

10. Secondly, We are to ſubmit to his Wiſdom in reſpect of his Diſpoſal and ordering of things; to acknowledge he diſpoſes all things moſt Wiſely, and that not only in what concerns the World in general; but alſo in what concerns every one of us in particular; ſo that in what condition ſoever he puts us, we are to aſſure our ſelves it is that which is beſt for us, ſince he chuſes it for us who cannot erre. And therefore never to have impatient deſires of any thing in this World, but to leave it to God to fit us with ſuch an eſtate and condition as he ſees beſt for us, and there let us quietly and contentedly reſt; yea, though it be ſuch as of all others we ſhould leaſt have wiſh'd for our ſelves. And this ſurely cannot but appear very reaſonable to any that hath humility: for that having taught him, that God is infinitely wiſe, and he very fooliſh, he can never doubt but that it is much more for his good that God ſhould chuſe for him than he for himſelf; even as it is much more for the childs good to have the Parent chuſe for it, than to be left to thoſe ſilly choices it would make for it ſelf. For how many times would it cut, and burn, and miſchief it ſelf if it might have every thing it deſires? and ſuch children are we, we many times eagerly deſire thoſe things which would undo us if we had them. Thus many times we wiſh for Wealth, and Honour, and Beauty, and the like, when if we had them they would only prove ſnares to us, we ſhould be drawn

drawn into ſin by them. And this God, who knows all things, ſees, though we do not, and therefore often denies us thoſe things which he ſees will tend to our miſchief, and it is his abundant mercy that he doth ſo. Let us therefore whenever we are diſappointed of any of our aims and wiſhes, not only patiently but joyfully ſubmit to it, as knowing that it is certainly beſt for us, it being choſen by the unerring wiſdom of our heavenly Father.

11. A ſeventh Duty to God is HONOUR, that is, the paying him ſuch a reverence and reſpect as belongs to ſo great a Majeſty. And this is either inward or outward. The inward is the exalting him in our hearts, having always the higheſt and moſt excellent eſteem of him. The outward is the manifeſting and ſhewing forth that inward; and that is the firſt general in the whole courſe of our lives, the living like Men that do indeed carry that high eſteem of God. Now you know if we bear any ſpecial Reverence but to a Man, we will be careful not to do any foul or baſe thing in his preſence; and ſo if we do indeed honour God, we ſhall abhor to do any unworthy thing in his ſight. But God ſees all things, and therefore there is no way to ſhun the doing it in his ſight if we do it at all; therefore if we do thus reverence him, we muſt never at any time do any ſinful thing. *Honour.*

12. But beſides this general way of honouring God, there are many particular acts by which we may honour him, and theſe acts are di- *Several ways of honouring God.*

vers

vers according to the ſeveral particulars about which they are exerciſed. For we are to pay this honour not only immediately to himſelf, but alſo by a due eſtimation and account of all thoſe things that nearly relate or belong to him. Thoſe are eſpecially ſix; firſt, his Houſe; ſecondly, his Revenue or income (as I may ſay) thirdly, his Day; fourthly, his Word; fifthly, his Sacraments, and ſixthly, his Name; and every one of theſe is to have ſome degree of our Reverence and Eſteem.

In his Houſe.

13. Firſt, his Houſe, that is, the Church, which being the place ſet apart for his publick worſhip, we are to look on it, though not as holy in reſpect of it ſelf, yet in reſpect of its uſe, and therefore muſt not profane it by imploying it to uſes of our own. This Chriſt hath taught us by that act of his, *Matth.* 21. 12. in driving the buyers and ſellers out of the Temple, ſaying, *My houſe is called the houſe of prayer:* and again, *John* 2. 16. *Make not my Father's houſe a houſe of Merchandize.* By which it is clear, Churches are to be uſed only for the ſervices of God, and we are to make that the only end of our coming thither, and not to come to Church as to a Market, to make bargains or diſpatch buſineſſes with our neighbours, as is too common among many. But whenever thou entreſt the Church, remember that it is the Houſe of God, a place where he is in an eſpecial manner preſent, and therefore take the counſel of the wiſe man, *Eccleſ.* 5. 1. and *keep thy foot when thou goeſt into the houſe of God*: that is, behave thy ſelf with that Godly awe and reverence which

which belongs to that great Majeſty thou art before. Remember that thy buſineſs there is to converſe with God, and therefore ſhut out all thoughts of the world, even of thy moſt lawful buſineſs, which though they be allowable at another time, are here ſinful. How fearful a guilt is it then to entertain any ſuch thoughts as are in themſelves wicked? It is like the treaſon of *Judas*, who pretended indeed to come to kiſs his Maſter, but brought with him a band of Souldiers to apprehend him, *Matth.* 26. We make ſhew in our coming to Church, of ſerving and worſhipping God, but we bring with us a train of his enemies to provoke and deſpite him. This is a wickedneſs that may outvie the prophaneneſs of theſe days, in turning Churches into Stables; for ſinful and polluted thoughts are much the worſe ſort of Beaſts.

14. The ſecond thing to which reſpect belongs, is his Revenue or Income; that is, whatſoever is his peculiar poſſeſſions, ſet apart for the maintenance of thoſe that attend his Service; thoſe were the Prieſts in time of the Law, and Miniſters of the Goſpel now with us. And whatever is thus ſet apart, we muſt look on with ſuch reſpect as not to dare to turn it to any other uſe. Of this ſort ſome are the free-will offerings of Men, who have ſometimes of their own accord given ſome of their Goods or Land to this Holy uſe; and whatſoever is ſo given, can neither by the perſon that gave, nor any other be taken away, without that great ſin of Sacriledge. *His poſſeſſions.*

15. But

15. But beſides theſe, there was among the *Jews*, and hath always been in all Chriſtian Nations, ſomething allotted by the Law of the Nation for the ſupport and maintenance of thoſe that attend the ſervice of God. And it is but juſt and neceſſary it ſhould be ſo, that thoſe who by undertaking that Calling are taken off from the ways of gaining a livelihood in the World, ſhould be provided for by them whoſe ſouls they watch over. And therefore it is moſt reaſonable, which the Apoſtle urges in this matter, 1 *Cor.* 9.11. *If we have ſown unto you ſpiritual things, is it a great thing if we ſhall reap your carnal things?* That is, it is moſt unreaſonable for Men to grudge the beſtowing a few carnal things, the outward neceſſaries of this temporal life, on them from whom they receive ſpiritual things, even inſtruction and aſſiſtance towards the obtaining of an eternal life.

The great ſin of Sacriledge.

16. Now whatſoever is thus appointed for this uſe, may by no means be employed to any other. And therefore thoſe Tithes which are here by Law allotted for the maintenance of the Miniſtry muſt by no means be kept back, nor any tricks or ſhifts uſed to avoid the payment either in whole or in part. For firſt, it is certain, that it is as truly theft as any other robbery can be, Miniſters having right to their Tithes by the ſame Law which gives any other Man right to his eſtate. But then ſecondly, it is another manner of robbery than we think of, it is a robbing of God, whoſe Service they were given to maintain; and that you may not doubt

doubt the truth of this, it is no more than God himſelf hath ſaid of it, *Mal.* 3. 8. *Will a man rob God? yet ye have robbed me; yet ye ſay, Wherein have we robbed thee? In Tithes and Offerings.* Here it is moſt plain that in God's account the withholding Tithes is a robbing of him. And if you pleaſe you may in the next verſe ſee what the gain of this robbery amounts to, *Ye are curſed with a curſe.* A curſe is all is gotten by it: and common experience ſhews us, that God's vengeance doth in a remarkable manner purſue this ſin of Sacriledge, whether it be that of withholding Tithes, or the other of ſeizing on thoſe poſſeſſions, which have been voluntarily conſecrated to God. Men think to enrich themſelves by it, but it uſually proves directly contrary; this unlawful gain becomes ſuch a Canker in the eſtate, as often eats out even that we had a juſt title to. And therefore if you love (I will not ſay your ſouls, but) your eſtates, preſerve them from that danger by a ſtrict care never to meddle with any thing ſet apart for God. *The puniſhment.*

17. A third thing wherein we are to expreſs our Reverence to God, is the hallowing of the Times, ſet apart for his Service. He who hath given all our time, requires ſome part of it to be paid back again as a rent or tribute of the whole. Thus the *Jews* kept holy the ſeventh day, and we Chriſtians the Sunday or Lords day; the *Jews* were in their Sabbath eſpecially to remember the creation of the world, and we in ours, the Reſurrection of Chriſt, *The Times for his ſervice.* *Lord's day.*

Chriſt, by which a way is made for us into that better world we expect hereafter. Now this day thus ſet apart, is to be employed in the Worſhip and Service of God, and that firſt more ſolemnly and publickly in the Congregation, from which no Man muſt then abſent himſelf without a juſt cauſe: and ſecondly, privately at home in praying with, and inſtructing our Families, or elſe in the yet more private duties of the cloſet; a Man's own private Prayers, Reading, Meditation, and the like.

And that we may be at leiſure for theſe, a Reſt from all worldly buſineſs is commanded; therefore let no Man think that a bare reſt from labour is all that is required of him on the Lord's day, but the time which he ſaves from the works of his calling, he is to lay out on thoſe ſpiritual duties. For the Lord's Day was never ordained to give us a pretence for idleneſs, but only to change our employment from worldly to heavenly, much leſs was it meant that by our reſt from our callings we ſhould have more time free to beſtow upon our ſins, as too many do, who are more conſtant on that day at the Ale-houſe than the Church. But this Reſt was commanded, firſt to ſhadow out to us that Reſt from ſin which we are bound to all the days of our lives. And ſecondly, to take us off from our worldly buſineſs, and to give us time to attend the ſervice of God, and the need of our ſouls.

18. And ſurely if we rightly conſider it, it is a very great benefit to us that there is ſuch a ſet time thus weekly returning for that purpoſe. We are very intent and buſie upon the world, and

and if there were not ſome ſuch time appointed to our hands, it is to be doubted we ſhould hardly allot any our ſelves: and then what a ſtarved condition muſt theſe poor ſouls of ours be in, that ſhall never be afforded a meal? Whereas now there is a conſtant Diet provided for them: every Sunday, if we will conſcionably employ it, may be a Feſtival day to them, may bring them in ſuch ſpiritual food, as may nouriſh them to eternal life. We are not to look on this day with grudging like thoſe in *Amos* 8. 5. who ask, *When will the Sabbath be gone, that we may ſet forth wheat:* As if that time were utterly loſt, which were taken from our worldly buſineſs. But we are to conſider it, as the gainfulleſt, as the joyfulleſt day of the week, a day of harveſt, wherein we are to lay up in ſtore for the whole week, nay for our whole lives.

19. But beſides this of the weekly Lord's day, there are other times which the Church hath ſet apart for the remembrance of ſome ſpecial mercies of God, ſuch as the Birth and Reſurrection of Chriſt, the deſcent of the Holy Ghoſt, and the like; and theſe days we are to keep in that manner which the Church hath ordered, to wit in the ſolemn worſhip of God, and in particular thankſgiving for that ſpecial bleſſing we then remember. And ſurely whoever is truly thankful for thoſe rich mercies, cannot think it too much to ſet apart ſome few days in a year for that purpoſe. *The Feaſts of the Church.*

But then we are to look that our Feaſts be truly ſpiritual, by imploying the day thus holily, and not

not make it an occaſion of intemperance and diſorder, as too many, who conſider nothing in Chriſtmas and other good times, but the good chear and jollity of them. For that is doing deſpight inſtead of honour to Chriſt, who came to bring all purity and ſoberneſs into the World, and therefore muſt not have that coming of his remembred in any other manner.

20. Other days there are alſo ſet apart in memory of the Apoſtles, and other Saints, wherein we are to give hearty thanks to God, for his graces in them; particularly that they were made inſtruments of revealing to us Chriſt *Jeſus*, and the way of ſalvation, as you know the Apoſtles were by their Preaching throughout the World. And then farther, we are to meditate on thoſe Examples of holy life, they have given us, and ſtir up our ſelves to the imitation thereof. And whoever does uprightly ſet himſelf to make theſe uſes of theſe ſeveral Holy-days, will have cauſe by the benefit he ſhall find from them, to thank, and not to blame the Church for ordering them.

The Faſts.

21. Another ſort of days there are, which we are likewiſe to obſerve, and thoſe are days of Faſting and Humiliation; and whatever of this kind the Church enjoyns, whether conſtantly at ſet times of the year, or upon any ſpecial and more ſudden occaſion, we are to obſerve in ſuch manner as ſhe directs, that is, not only a bare abſtaining from Meat, which is only the Bodies puniſhment; but in afflicting our ſouls, humbling them deeply before God, in a hearty confeſſing, and bewailing of our own, and the Nations ſins, and earneſt

earneſt prayer for God's pardon and forgiveneſs, and for the turning away of thoſe judgments, which thoſe ſins have called for: but above all, in *turning our ſelves from our ſins*, *looſing the bands of wickedneſs*, as *Iſaiah* ſpeaks, Chap. 58. 6. and exerciſing our ſelves in works of mercy, *dealing our bread to the hungry*, and the like, as it there follows.

22. Fourthly, We are to expreſs our Reverence to God, by honouring his Word; and this we muſt certainly do if we do indeed honour him, there being no ſurer ſign of our deſpiſing any perſon than the ſetting light by what he ſays to us; as on the contrary, if we value One, every word he ſpeaks will be of weight with us. Now this Word of God is expreſly contained in the holy Scriptures, the Old and New Teſtament, where he ſpeaks to us, to ſhew us his Will and our Duty. And therefore to this Word of his, we are to bear a wonderful reſpect, to look upon it, as the rule by which we muſt frame all the actions of our life: and to that end to ſtudy it much, to read in it as often as we can, if it may be, never to let a day paſs us without reading or hearing ſome part of it read.

God's word.

The holy Scriptures.

23. But then that is not all: we muſt not only read, but we muſt mark what we read, we muſt diligently obſerve, what Duties there are which God commands us to perform, what faults they are, which God there charges us not to commit, together with the rewards promiſed to the one, and the puniſhment threatned to the other. When we

we have thus marked, we must lay them up in our memory; not so loosely and carelessly that they shall presently drop out again; but we must so fasten them there by often thinking and meditating on them, that we may have them ready for our use. Now that use is the directing of our lives; and therefore whenever we are tempted to the committing of any evil, we are then to call to mind, This is the thing which in such a Scripture is forbidden by God, and all his vengeances threatned against it; and so in like manner when any opportunity is offered us of doing good, to remember, This is the duty which I was exhorted to in such a Scripture, and such glorious rewards promised to the doing of it; and by these considerations strengthen our selves for resistance of the evil and performance of the good.

24. But besides this of the written Word, it hath pleased God to provide yet farther for our instruction by his Ministers, whose office it is to teach us God's Will, not by saying any thing contrary to the written Word (for whatsoever is so, can never be God's Will) but by explaining it, and making it easier to our understandings, and then applying it to our particular occasions, and exhorting and stirring us up to the practice of it; all which is the end at which first their Catechizing and then their Preaching aimeth. And to this we are to bear also a due respect by giving diligent heed thereto, not only being present at Catechizings and Sermons, and either sleep out the time, or think of somewhat else, but carefully marking what is said to us. And surely if we did but rightly consider, how much it concerns

cerns us, we ſhould conclude it very reaſonable for us to do ſo.

25. For firſt, as to that of Catechizing, it is the laying the foundation upon which all Chriſtian practice muſt be built; for that is the teaching us our duty, without which it is impoſſible for us to perform it. And though it is true, that the Scriptures are the Fountains from whence this knowledge of duty muſt be fetched, yet there are many who are not able to draw it from this Fountain themſelves, and therefore it is abſolutely neceſſary it ſhould be thus brought to them by others. *Catechizing.*

26. This catechizing is generally lookt upon as a thing belonging only to the youth, and ſo indeed it ought, not becauſe the oldeſt are not to learn, if they be ignorant, but becauſe all children ſhould be ſo inſtructed, that it ſhould be impoſſible for them to be ignorant when they come to years. And it nearly concerns every Parent, as they will free themſelves from the guilt of their childrens eternal undoing, that they be careful to ſee them inſtructed in all neceſſary things; to which purpoſe it will be fit early to teach them ſome ſhort Catechiſm, of which ſort none ſo fit as the Church Catechiſm; yet are they not to reſt on theſe endeavours of their own, but alſo to call in the Miniſters help, that he may build them up farther in Chriſtian knowledge.

27. But alas! It is too ſure that Parents have very much neglected this Duty, and by that means it is that ſuch multitudes of Men and Women, that are called Chriſtians, know no more of

Chriſt, or any thing that concerns their own Souls, than the meereſt Heathen.

28. But although it were their Parents fault that they were not inſtructed when they were young, yet it is now their own, if they remain ſtill ignorant; and it is ſure it will be their own ruine and miſery if they wilfully continue ſo. Therefore whoever he be, of what age or condition ſoever, that is in this ignorant eſtate, or in any ſuch degree of it, that he wants any part of neceſſary ſaving knowledge, let him as he loves his ſoul, as ever he would eſcape eternal damnation, ſeek out for inſtruction, and let no fear of ſhame keep any from it: for firſt it is certain the ſhame belongs only to the wilful continuing in ignorance, to which the deſire of learning is directly contrary, and is ſo far from a ſhameful, that it is a moſt commendable thing, and will be ſure to be ſo accounted by all wiſe and good Men. But ſecondly, ſuppoſe ſome prophane, ſenſeleſs people ſhould deride it, yet ſure that ſhame were in all reaſon to be undergone joyfully, rather than venture on that confuſion of face which will at the day of judgment befal thoſe who to avoid a little falſe ſhame amongſt Men, have gone on in a wilful ignorance of their duty, which ignorance will be ſo far from excuſing any ſins they ſhall commit, that it adds one great and heavy ſin to all the reſt, even the deſpiſing that knowledge which is offered to them. How hainous a ſin that is, you may learn in the firſt Chapter of the *Proverbs*, where *hating knowledge*, verſ. 29. is ſaid to be the thing that draws down thoſe ſad vengeances forementioned, even God's forſaking Men, laughing

laughing at their calamity inſtead of helping them: which is of all other conditions in the World the moſt miſerable; and ſurely they are madly deſperate that will run themſelves into it.

29. As for thoſe who have already this foundation laid by the knowledge of the grounds of Chriſtian Religion, there is yet for them a farther help provided by Preaching. And it is no more than needs, for, God knows, thoſe that underſtand their duty well enough are too apt to forget it; nay, ſometimes by the violence of their own luſts to tranſgreſs it even when they do remember it, and therefore it is very uſeful we ſhould be put in mind of it to prevent our forgetting, and alſo often exhorted and aſſiſted to withſtand thoſe luſts which draw us to thoſe tranſgreſſions. And to theſe purpoſes preaching is intended, firſt, to warn us to be upon our guard againſt our ſpiritual enemy, and then to furniſh us with weapons for the fight; that is, ſuch means and helps as may beſt enable us to beat off temptations, and get the victory over them. *Preaching.*

30. Since therefore this is the end of Preaching, we muſt not think we have done our duty when we have heard a Sermon, though never ſo attentively, but we muſt lay up in our hearts thoſe inſtructions and advices we there meet with, and uſe them faithfully to that end of overcoming our ſins. Therefore when ever thou comeſt to the Phyſician of thy Soul, do as thou wouldſt with the Phyſician of thy Body; thou comeſt to him not only to hear him talk and tell thee what will cure thee, but alſo to do accord-

ing to his directions: and if thou doſt not ſo here, thou art as vain as he that expects a bare receipt from his Doctor ſhould cure him, though he never make uſe of it. Nay, thou art much more vain and ridiculous, for that, though it do him no good, will do him no harm, he ſhall never be the worſe for having been taught a Medicine, though he uſe it not: but in theſe Spiritual Receipts it is otherwiſe; if we uſe them not to our good, they will do us a great deal of harm, they will riſe up in Judgment againſt us, and make our condemnation ſo much the heavier. Beware therefore not to bring that danger upon thy ſelf, but when thou haſt heard a Sermon, conſider with thy ſelf what directions there were in it for enabling thee to eſchew evil, or to do good. And if there were any thing eſpecially concern'd thine own boſom ſin, lay that cloſe to thy heart, and all the week after make it matter of meditation: think of it even whileſt thou art at thy work, if thou wanteſt other time; and not only think of it, but ſet to the practice of it, do what thou wert adviſed to, for the ſubduing ſins, and quickening grace in thee. Finally, look carefully to practiſe the counſel of the Apoſtle, Jam. 1.22. *Be ye doers of the Word, not hearers only, deceiving your own ſouls.* To hope for good from the Word without doing it, is, it ſeems, nothing but a deceiving our ſelves: Let us never therefore meaſure our godlineſs by the number of Sermons which we hear, as if the hearing many were the certain mark of a good Chriſtian: but by the ſtore of fruit we bring forth by them, without which all our hearing will ſerve but to

bring

bring us into that heavier portion of ſtripes, which belongs to him that *knows his Maſter's will and does it not*, *Luke* 12.47. But this reverence which is due to Preaching we muſt not pay to all that is now adays called ſo, for God knows there are many *falſe Prophets gone out into the world*, as the Apoſtle ſpeaks, 1 *John* 4. 1. And now, if ever, is that advice of his neceſſary, *To try the ſpirits whether they be of God.* But what I have ſaid, I mean only of the Preaching of thoſe who firſt have a lawful calling to the Office, and ſecondly frame their Doctrine according to the right rule, the written Word of God. But if any man ſay, he is not able to judge whether the doctrine be according to the Word or no, let him at leaſt try it by the common known rules of duty which he doth underſtand, and if he find it a Doctrine giving men liberty to commit thoſe things which are by all acknowledged ſins, ſuch as Rebellion, Injuſtice, Unmercifulneſs, Uncleanneſs, or the like, he may conclude, it is utterly contrary to God and his Word, and then abhorrence, and not reverence belongs to it.

31. Fifthly, we are to expreſs our honouring of God by reverencing his Sacraments: thoſe are two, Baptiſm, and the Supper of the Lord. And this we are to do, Firſt, by our high eſteem of them. Secondly, by our reverent uſage of them: we are firſt to prize them at a high rate, looking on them, as the inſtruments of bringing to us the greateſt bleſſings we can receive. The firſt of them, Baptiſm, that enters us into covenant with God, makes us members of Chriſt. *The Sacraments.*

and ſo gives us right to all thoſe precious benefits, that flow from him, to wit, pardon of ſins, ſanctifying grace, and Heaven it ſelf, on condition we perform our parts of the Covenant. And as for the Lord's Supper, that is not only a ſign and remembrance of Chriſt and his Death; but it is actually the giving Chriſt, and all the fruits of his Death to every worthy Receiver; and therefore there is a moſt high eſtimation, and value due to each of them.

Of Baptiſm.

32. And not only ſo, but in the ſecond place we muſt ſhew our reverence in our uſage of them; and that firſt, Before; ſecondly, At; thirdly, After the time of Receiving them. It is true that the Sacrament of Baptiſm being now adminiſtred to us, when we are Infants, it is not to be expected of us, that we ſhould in our own perſons do any thing, either before or at the time of receiving it; thoſe performances were ſtrictly required of all perſons, who were Baptized when they were of years. But for us, it ſuffices to give us this right to Baptiſm, that we are born within the pale of the Church, that is, of Chriſtian Parents; and all that is required at that time is, what we can only perform by others, they in our ſtead promiſing that when we come to years we will perform our parts of the Covenant. But by how much the leſs we are then able to do ſo much, the greater bond lies on us to perform thoſe after-duties required of us, by which we are to ſupply the want of the former.

33. Now

33. Now if you would know what thoſe duties are, look over thoſe promiſes which your Godfathers and Godmothers then made in your name, and you may then learn them. I cannot give you them in a better form than that of our Churches Catechiſm, which tells us, *That our Godfathers and Godmothers did promiſe and vow three things in our names*; firſt, *that we ſhould forſake the Devil and all his works, the pomps and vanities of this wicked world, and all the ſinful luſts of the fleſh.* Where by the Devil, is meant, firſt, the worſhipping of all falſe gods, which is indeed but worſhipping the Devil: A ſin which at the time of Chriſt's coming into the World was very common, moſt part of Mankind then living in that vile idolatry. And therefore when Baptiſm was firſt ordained, it was but needful to make the forſaking of thoſe falſe Gods a principal part of the Vow. And though thoſe falſe worſhips are now much rarer, yet there was one ſpecial part of them, which may be feared to be yet too common among us, and that is all ſorts of uncleanneſs, which though we do not make Ceremonies of our Religion, as the Heathens did of theirs, yet the committing thereof is a moſt high provocation in God's eyes, ſuch as drew him to deſtroy whole *Cities with fire and brimſtone*, as you may read, *Gen.* 19. nay, the *whole world with water*, *Gen.* 6. and will not fail to bring down judgments, and ſtrange ones, on any that continue therein; and therefore the forſaking them well deſerves to be lookt on as an eſpecial part of this Promiſe. Beſides this, all

The vow of Baptiſm.

dealing with the Devil is here vowed againſt, whether it be by practiſing witchcraft our ſelves, or conſulting with thoſe that do, upon any occaſion what ever, as the recovery of our health, our goods, or whatever elſe; for this is a degree of the former ſin, it is the forſaking of the Lord and ſetting up the Devil for our God, whileſt we go to him in our needs for help.

34. But we alſo renounce all the works of the Devil; and thoſe are either in general all thoſe that the Devil tempts us to, or elſe thoſe particular kinds of ſin which have moſt of his image on them: that is, thoſe which he himſelf moſt practiſes, ſuch are Pride (which brought him from being an Angel of light to the accurſed condition he is now in) and Lying; he is, as our Saviour ſaith, *John* 8. 44. *A Lyar, and the Father of it*; and ſuch alſo are Malice and Envy, eſpecially Killing and Deſtroying of others, for he was a *murderer from the beginning*, *John* 8. 44. But above all there is nothing wherein we become ſo like him, as in Tempting and drawing others to ſin, which is his whole trade and buſineſs, and if we make it any part of ours, we become like that *roaring Lion, that goes about ſeeking whom he may devour*, 1 *Pet.* 5. 8.

35. The ſecond thing we Vow to forſake, is the *Pomps and Vanities of this wicked world*. By the Pomps and Vanities there are ſeveral things meant, ſome of them ſuch as were uſed by the Heathens in ſome Unlawful ſports of theirs, wherein we are not now ſo much concern'd, there being none of them remaining among us; but beſides that, there is meant all exceſs, either in

in diet, or ſports, or apparel, when we keep not thoſe due meaſures, which either by the general rules of ſobriety, or the particular circumſtances of our qualities and callings we are bound to. Next, by the wicked world, we may underſtand, firſt, the wealth and greatneſs of the world, which though we do not ſo totally renounce, that it is unlawful for a Chriſtian to be either rich or Great, yet we thus far promiſe to forſake them, that we will not ſet our hearts upon them, nor either get or keep them by the leaſt unlawful means. Secondly, by the wicked world, we may underſtand the companies and cuſtoms of the world, which ſo far as they are wicked, we here renounce; that is, we promiſe never to be drawn by company to the commiſſion of a ſin, but rather to forſake the moſt delightful company than to be enſnared by it; nor yet by cuſtom, but rather venture the ſhame of being thought ſingular, ridiculous perſons, walk as it were in a path by our ſelves, than put our ſelves into that *broad way that leads to deſtruction*, by giving our ſelves over to any ſinful cuſtom how common ſoever it be grown. If this part of our vow were but throughly conſidered, it would arm us againſt moſt of the temptations the world offers us, company and cuſtom being the two ſpecial inſtruments by which it works on us.

36. A third thing we renounce, is all the ſinful luſts of the fleſh; where the fleſh is to be underſtood in that ſence, wherein the Scripture often uſes it, for the fountain of all diſordered affections. For though thoſe unclean deſires which we ordinarily call the luſts of the fleſh are

here meant, yet they are not the only things here contained, there being divers other things which the Scripture calls the *works of the flesh*; I cannot better inform you of them than by setting down the list *S. Paul* gives of them, *Gal.* 5. 19, 20, 21. *Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these, Adultery, Fornication, Uncleanness, Lasciviousness, Idolatry, Witchcraft, Hatred, Variance, Emulations, Wrath, Strife, Seditions, Heresies, Envyings, Murders, Drunkenness, Revellings and such like.* This with those other descriptions, you will find scattered in several places of Scripture, will shew you there are many things contained in this part of your vow, the forsaking all the sinful lusts of the flesh.

37. The second thing our Godfathers and Godmothers promised for us, was, that *we should believe all the Articles of the Christian Faith.* These we have summed up together in that which we call the Apostles Creed, which since we promise to believe, we are supposed also to promise to learn them, and that not only the words, but likewise the plain sence of them: for who can believe what he either never heard of, or knows not any thing of the meaning of it? Now by this believing is meant not only the consenting to the truth of them, but also the living like them that do believe: As for example, our believing that God created us should make us live in that subjection and Obedience to him, which becomes Creatures to their Creator; the believing that Christ Redeemed us, should make us yield up our selves to him as his purchace, to be disposed wholly by him, and imployed only in his

his ſervice. The believing a judgment to come, ſhould give us care ſo to walk that we may not be condemned in it. And our believing the life everlaſting ſhould make us diligent ſo to employ our ſhort moment of time here, that our everlaſting life may be a life of joy, not of miſery to us. In this manner from all the Articles of the Creed, we are to draw motives to confirm us in all Chriſtian Practice, to which end it is that our learning and believing of them tends, and therefore without it we are very far from making good this part of our Vow, the *believing all the Articles of the Chriſtian Faith.*

38. The laſt part of our Vow is, that we *ſhould keep God's holy will and Commandments, and walk in the ſame all the days of our lives.* Where by *our keeping God's holy will and Commandments*, is meant our doing of all thoſe things, which he hath made known to us to be his will we ſhould perform; wherein he hath given us his holy word to inſtruct us, and teach us, what it is that he requires of us, and now he expects that we ſhould faithfully do it without favouring our ſelves in the breach of any one of his commands. And then in this entire obedience, we muſt walk *all the days of our lives*: that is, we muſt go on in a conſtant courſe of obeying God; not only fetch ſome few ſteps in his ways, but walk in them, and that not for ſome part of our time, but *all the days of our lives*, never turn out of them but go on conſtantly in them, as long as we live in this world.

The ſtrict obligation of this Vow of Baptiſm.

39. Having now thus briefly explained to you this Vow made at your BAPTISM, all I ſhall add concerning it, is only to remember you how nearly you are concern'd in the keeping it: and that firſt in reſpect of juſtice, ſecondly, in reſpect of advantage and benefit. That you are in juſtice bound to it, I need ſay no more, but that it is a promiſe, and you know juſtice requires of every man the keeping of his promiſe. But then this is of all other promiſes the moſt ſolemn and binding, for it is a vow, that is, a promiſe made to God; and therefore we are not only unjuſt, but forſworn, whenever we break any part of it.

40. But ſecondly, we are alſo highly concern'd to keep it, in reſpect of our own benefit, I told you before, that Baptiſm entred us into Covenant with God; now a Covenant is made up of two parts, that is ſomething promiſed by the one party, and ſomething by the other of the parties that make the Covenant. And if one of them break his part of the Covenant, that is, perform not what he hath agreed to, he can in no reaſon look that the other ſhould make good his. And ſo it is here, God doth indeed promiſe thoſe benefits before mentioned, and that is his part of the Covenant. But then we alſo undertake to perform the ſeveral things contained in this Vow of Baptiſm, and that is our part of it, and unleſs we do indeed perform them, God is not tied to make good his, and ſo we forfeit all thoſe precious benefits and advantages,

tages, we are left in that natural and miſerable eſtate of ours, *children of wrath, enemies to God, and heirs of eternal damnation.* And now what can be the pleaſure that any or all ſins can afford us, that can make us the leaſt degree of recompence for ſuch a loſs, the loſs of God's favour and grace here, and the loſs of our own Souls hereafter? For as our Saviour ſaith, *Mark* 8. 36. *What ſhall it profit a man if he ſhall gain the whole world and loſe his own ſoul?* Yet this mad bargain we make when ever we break any part of this our Vow of Baptiſm. It therefore moſt nearly concerns us to conſider ſadly of it, to remember that every ſin we commit is a direct breach of this our Vow, and therefore when thou art tempted to any ſin, ſeem it never ſo light, ſay not of it as *Lot* did of *Zoar*, *Gen.* 19. 20. *Is it not a little one?* But conſider that whatever it is, thou haſt in thy Baptiſm vowed againſt it, and then be it never ſo little, it draws a great one at the heels of it, no leſs than that of being forſworn, which whoever commits, God hath in the third Commandment pronounced, *He will not hold him guiltleſs.* And that we may the better keep this vow, it will be very uſeful often to repeat to our ſelves the ſeveral branches of it, that ſo we may ſtill have it ready in our minds to ſet againſt all temptations; and ſurely it is ſo excellent a weapon, that if we do not either caſt it aſide, or uſe it very negligently, it will enable us by God's help, to put to flight our ſpiritual adverſary. And this is that reverence we are to pay to this firſt Sacrament, that of Baptiſm.

SUN-

SUNDAY III.

Of the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper, Of preparation before, as examination; Of Repentance, Faith, Obedience, of duties to be done at the Receiving and afterwards, &c.

Sect. 1. *The Lords Supper.* NOW follows the Reverence due to the Sacrament of the LORD's SUPPER; and in this I must follow my first division, and set down first, what is to be done Before; secondly, At; and thirdly, After the time of Receiving; for in this Sacrament we cannot be excused from any one of these, though in the former we are.

2. And first, for that which is to be done Before, S. *Paul* tells us it is Examination, 1 *Cor.* 11. 28. *But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread and drink of that cup.* But before I proceed to the particulars of this Examination, I must in the general tell you, that the special business we have to do in this Sacrament, is to repeat and renew that Covenant we made with God in our Baptism, which we having

Things to be done before receiving.

Examination.

having many ways grievouſly broken, it pleaſes God in his great mercy to ſuffer us to come to the renewing of it in this Sacrament, which if we do in ſincerity of heart, he hath promiſed to accept us, and to give us all thoſe benefits in this, which he was ready to beſtow in the other Sacrament, if we had not by our own fault forfeited them. Since then the renewing of our Covenant is our buſineſs at this time, it follows that theſe three things are neceſſary towards it: Firſt, that we underſtand what the Covenant is; Secondly, that we conſider what our Breaches of it have been; and thirdly, that we reſolve upon a ſtrict obſervance of it, for the reſt of our life. And the trying our ſelves in every one of theſe particulars is that examination which is required of us before we come to this Sacrament.

3. And Firſt, we are to examine whether we underſtand what this Covenant is; this is exceeding neceſſary, as being the foundation of both the other, for it is neither poſſible to diſcover our paſt ſins, nor to ſettle purpoſes againſt them for the future without it. Let this therefore be your firſt buſineſs. Try whether you rightly underſtand what that Covenant is which you entred into at your Baptiſm, what be the Mercies promiſed on God's part, and the Duties on yours. And becauſe the Covenant made with each of us in Baptiſm is only the applying to our particulars the Covenant made by God in Chriſt with all Mankind in general, you are to conſider whether you underſtand that; if you do not, you muſt immediately ſeek for inſtruction in it. And till you have means of gaining better,

better, look over what is briefly ſaid in the entrance to this Treatiſe, concerning the SECOND COVENANT, which is the foundation of that Covenant which God makes with us in our Baptiſm. And becauſe you will there find, that obedience to all God's Commands is the condition required of us, and is alſo that which we expreſly Vow in our Baptiſm, it is neceſſary you ſhould likewiſe know what thoſe Commands of God are. Therefore if you find you are ignorant of them, never be at reſt till you have got your ſelf inſtructed in them, and have gained ſuch a meaſure of knowledge as may direct you to do that *Whole Duty of Man* which God requires. And the giving thee this inſtruction is the only aim of this Book, which, the more ignorant thou art, the more earneſtly I ſhall intreat thee diligently to read. And if thou haſt heretofore approacht to this Holy Sacrament in utter ignorance of theſe neceſſary things, bewail thy ſin in ſo doing, but preſume not to come again till thou haſt by gaining this neceſſary knowledge fitted thy ſelf for it, which thou muſt haſten to do. For though no man muſt come to the Sacrament in ſuch ignorance, yet if he wilfully continue in it, that will be no excuſe to him for keeping from this Holy Table.

4. The ſecond part of our examination is concerning our breaches of this Covenant; and here thou wilt find the uſe of that knowledge I ſpake of. For there is no way of diſcovering what our Sins have been, but by trying our Actions by that which ſhould be the rule of them, the Law of God. When there-

Sins.

therefore thou ſetteſt to this part of Examination, remember what are the ſeveral branches of thy duty, and then ask thy own heart in every particular, how thou haſt performed it. And content not thy ſelf with knowing in general, that thou haſt broken God's Law, but do thy utmoſt to diſcover in what particulars thou haſt done ſo. Recal, as well as thou canſt, all the paſſages of thy life, and in each of them conſider what part of that duty hath been tranſgreſt by it. And that not only in the groſſer act, but in word alſo: nay, even in thy moſt ſecret thoughts: For though man's Law reaches not to them, yet God's doth; ſo that whatever he forbids in the act, he forbids likewiſe in the thoughts and deſires, and ſees them as clearly as our moſt publick acts. This particular ſearch is exceeding neceſſary: for there is no promiſe of forgiveneſs of any ſin but only to him that confeſſeth and forſaketh it. Now to both theſe it is neceſſary that we have a direct and particular knowledge of our ſins. For how can he either confeſs his Sin, that knows not his guilt of it? or how can he reſolve to forſake it, that diſcerns not himſelf to have formerly cleaved to it? Therefore we may ſurely conclude, that this Examination is not only uſeful but neceſſary towards a full and complete repentance; for he that does not take this particular view of his ſins, will be likely to repent but by halves, which will never avail him towards his pardon; nothing but an entire forſaking of every evil way, being ſufficient for that. But ſurely of all other times

Several ſorts.

times it concerns us, that when we come to the Sacrament our repentance be full and complete; and therefore this ſtrict ſearch of our own hearts is then eſpecially neceſſary. For although it be true, that it is not poſſible by all our diligence to diſcover or remember every ſin of our whole lives, and though it be alſo true, that what is ſo unavoidably hid from us, may be forgiven without any more particular confeſſion than that of *David*, Pſalm 19. 12. *Cleanſe thou me from my ſecret faults*; yet this will be no plea for us, if they come to be ſecret only, becauſe we are negligent in ſearching. Therefore take heed of deceiving thy ſelf in this weighty buſineſs, but ſearch thy ſoul to the bottom, without which it is impoſſible that the wounds thereof ſhould ever be throughly cured.

5. And as you are to enquire thus narrowly concerning the ſeveral ſorts of ſins, ſo alſo muſt you concerning the degrees of them, for there are divers Circumſtances which increaſe and heighten the Sin. Of this ſort there are many; as firſt, when we ſin againſt knowledge, that is, when we certainly know ſuch a thing to be a ſin, yet for the preſent pleaſure or profit (or whatever other motive) adventure on it. This is by Chriſt himſelf adjudged to be a great heightning of the ſin, *He that knows his Maſters will and doth it not, ſhall be beaten with many ſtripes*, Luke 12. 47. Secondly, when we ſin with Deliberation, that is, when we do not fall into it of a ſudden, ere we are aware, but have time to conſider of it, this is another degree of the ſin. But thirdly, a yet higher is, when we do it againſt the Reſiſtances

ſiſtances and checks of our own Conſcience, when that at the time tells us, This thing thou oughteſt not to do: nay, lays before us the danger as well as the ſin of it, yet in ſpight of theſe admonitions of conſcience we go on and commit the ſin; this is a huge increaſe of it, ſuch as will raiſe the leaſt ſin into a moſt high provocation. For it is plain, a ſin thus committed muſt be a wilful one, and then be the matter of it never ſo light, it is moſt hainous in God's eyes. Nay, this is a circumſtance of ſuch force, that it may make an indifferent action that is in it ſelf no ſin, become one. For though my Conſcience ſhould erre in telling me ſuch a thing were unlawful, yet ſo long as I were ſo perſwaded, it were ſin for me to do that thing; for in that caſe my Will conſents to the doing a thing which I believe to be diſpleaſing to God, and God (who judges us by our Wills, not Underſtandings) imputes it to me as a ſin, as well as if the thing were in it ſelf unlawful. And therefore ſurely we may conclude, that any thing which is in it ſelf ſinful, is made much more ſo by deing committed againſt the checks of Conſcience. A fourth aggravation of a ſin is when it hath been often repeated, for then there is not only the guilt of ſo many more Acts, but every Act grows alſo ſo much worſe, and more inexcuſable. We always judge thus in faults committed againſt our ſelves, we can forgive a ſingle injury more eaſily than the ſame when it hath been repeated, and the oftner it hath been ſo repeated, the more hainous we account it. And ſo ſurely it is in faults againſt God alſo. Fifthly, the

the ſins which have been committed after Vows and reſolutions of amendment are yet more grievous: for that contains alſo the breaking of thoſe promiſes. Somewhat of this there is in every wilful ſin, becauſe every ſuch is a breach of that vow we make at Baptiſm. But beſides that, we have ſince bound our ſelves by new vows, if at no other time, yet ſurely at our coming to the Lord's Supper, that being (as was formerly ſaid) purpoſely to repeat our vows of Baptiſm. And the more of theſe vows we have made, ſo much the greater is our guilt, if we fall back to any ſin we then renounced. This is a thing very well worth weighing, and therefore examine thy ſelf particularly at thy approach to the Sacrament concerning thy breaches of former vows made at the Holy Table. And if upon any other occaſion, as ſickneſs, trouble of mind, or the like, thou haſt at any time made any other, call thy ſelf to a ſtrict account how thou haſt performed them alſo, and remember that every ſin committed againſt ſuch vows, is beſides its own natural guilt a perjury likewiſe. Sixthly, a yet higher ſtep is, when a Sin hath been ſo often committed that we are come to a cuſtom and habit of it: and that is indeed a high degree.

6. Yet even of Habits ſome are worſe than others, as firſt, if it be ſo confirmed that we are come to a hardneſs of heart, have no ſenſe at all of the ſin: Or, ſecondly, if we go on in it againſt any extraordinary means uſed by God to reform us, ſuch as ſickneſs, or any other affliction which ſeems to be ſent on purpoſe for our reclaiming

reclaiming. Or thirdly, if all Reproofs and Exhortations either of Miniſters or private friends work not on us, but either make us angry at our reprovers, or ſet us on defending the ſin. Or laſtly, if this ſinful Habit be ſo ſtrong in us as to give us a love to the ſin, not only in our ſelves but in others: if, as the Apoſtle ſaith, *Rom.* 1. 31. *We do not only do the things, but take pleaſure in them that do them*, and therefore intice and draw as many as we can into the ſame ſins with us: Then it is riſen to the higheſt ſtep of wickedneſs, and is to be lookt on as the utmoſt degree both of ſin and danger. Thus you ſee how you are to Examine your ſelves concerning your ſins, in each of which you are to conſider how many of theſe heightning circumſtances there have been, that ſo you may aright meaſure the hainouſneſs of them.

Humiliation.

7. Now the end of this Examination is, to bring you to ſuch a ſight of your ſins, as may truly humble you, make you ſenſible of your own danger, that have provoked ſo great a Majeſty, who is able ſo ſadly to revenge himſelf upon you. And that will ſurely even to the moſt carnal heart appear a reaſonable ground of ſorrow. But that is not all: it muſt likewiſe bring you to a ſenſe and abhorrence of your baſeneſs, and ingratitude, that have thus offended ſo good and gracious a God, that have made ſuch unworthy and unkind returns to thoſe tender and rich mercies of his. And this conſideration eſpecially muſt melt your hearts into a deep ſorrow and contrition, the degree whereof muſt be in ſome

ſome meaſure anſwerable to the degree of your ſins. And the greater it is, provided it be not ſuch as ſhuts up the hope of God's Mercy, the more acceptable it is to God, who hath promiſed not to *deſpiſe a broken and contrite heart*, *Pſalm* 51. 17. And the more likely it will be alſo to bring us to amendment: For if we have once felt what the ſmart of a wounded Spirit is, we ſhall have the leſs mind to venture upon ſin again.

8. For when we are tempted with any of the ſhort pleaſures of ſin, we may then out of our own experience ſet againſt them the ſharp pains and terrors of an accuſing conſcience, which will to any that hath felt them be able infinitely to outweigh them. Endeavour therefore to bring your ſelves to this melting temper, to this deep unfeigned ſorrow, and that not only for the danger you have brought upon your ſelf; for though that be a conſideration which may and ought to work ſadneſs in us, yet where that alone is the motive of our ſorrow, it is not that ſorrow which will avail us for pardon; and the reaſon of it is clear, for that ſorrow proceeds only from the love of our ſelves, we are ſorry becauſe we are like to ſmart. But the ſorrow of a true penitent muſt be joyned alſo with the love of God, and that will make us grieve for having offended him, though there were no puniſhment to fall upon our ſelves. The way then to ſtir up this ſorrow in us, is firſt, to ſtir up our love of God, by repeating to our ſelves the many gracious acts of his mercy towards us, particularly, that

Contrition.

that of his ſparing us, and not cutting us off in our ſins. Conſider with thy ſelf how many and how great provocations thou haſt offered him, perhaps in a continued courſe of many years wilful diſobedience, for which thou mighteſt with perfect juſtice have been ere this ſent quick into Hell: Nay poſſibly thou haſt before thee many examples of leſs ſinners than thou art, who have been ſuddenly ſnatcht away in the midſt of their ſins. And what cauſe canſt thou give, why thou haſt thus long eſcaped, but only becauſe His eye hath ſpared thee? And what cauſe of that ſparing, but his tender compaſſions towards thee, his unwillingneſs that thou ſhouldſt periſh? This conſideration if it be preſt home upon thy ſoul, cannot chuſe (if thy heart be not as hard as the nether Milſtone) but awake ſomewhat of love in thee towards this gracious, this long-ſuffering God, and that love will certainly make it appear to thee, that it is an *evil thing and bitter, that thou haſt forſaken the Lord*, *Jer.* 2. 19. That thou haſt made ſuch wretched requitals of ſo great mercy; it will make thee both aſhamed and angry at thy ſelf that thou haſt been ſuch an unthankful creature. But if the conſideration of this one ſort of mercy, God's forbearance only, be ſuch an engagement and help to this godly ſorrow, what will then be the multitude of thoſe other mercies which every Man is able to reckon up to himſelf? And therefore let every Man be as particular in it as he can, call to mind as many of them as he is able, that ſo he may attain to the greater degree of true contrition.

9. And to all theſe endeavours muſt be added earneſt

earneſt prayers to God, that he by his holy Spirit would ſhew you your ſins, and ſoften your hearts, that you may throughly bewail and lament them.

Confeſſion. 10. To this muſt be joyned an humble confeſſion of ſins to God, and that not only in general, but alſo in particular, as far as your memory of them will reach, and that with all thoſe heightning circumſtances of them, which you have by the forementioned examination diſcovered. Yea, even ſecret and forgotten ſins muſt in general be acknowledged, for it is certain there are multitudes of ſuch; ſo that it is neceſſary for every one of us to ſay with *David*, *Pſalm* 19. 12. *Who can underſtand his errors? Cleanſe thou me from my ſecret faults.* When you have thus confeſt your ſins with this hearty ſorrow, and ſincere hatred of them, you may then (and not before) be concluded to feel ſo much of your diſeaſe, that it will be ſeaſonable to apply the remedy.

Faith. 11. In the next place therefore you are to look on him whom God *hath ſet forth to be the propitiation for our ſins*, Rom. 3. 25. *Even Jeſus Chriſt, that Lamb of God, which taketh away the ſins of the world*, John 1. 29. And earneſtly beg of God, that by his moſt precious bloud your ſins may be waſhed away: and that God would for his ſake be reconciled to you. And this you are to believe will ſurely be done, if you do for the reſt of your time forſake your ſins, and give your ſelves up ſincerely to obey God in all his commands. But without that it

it is vain to hope any benefit from Chriſt, or his ſufferings. And therefore the next part of your preparation muſt be the ſetting thoſe reſolutions of obedience, which I told you was the third thing you are to examine your ſelves of before your approach to the holy Sacrament.

Reſolutions of Obedience.

12. Concerning the particulars of this Reſolution, I need ſay no more, but that it muſt anſwer every part, and branch of our duty; that is, we muſt not only in general reſolve that we will obſerve God's Commandments, but we muſt reſolve it for every Commandment by it ſelf; and eſpecially where we have found our ſelves moſt to have failed heretofore, there eſpecially to renew our reſolutions. And herein it nearly concerns us to look that theſe reſolutions be ſincere and unfeigned, and not only ſuch ſlight ones as people uſe out of cuſtom to put on at their coming to the Sacrament, which they never think of keeping afterwards. For this is a certain truth, that whoſoever comes to this holy Table without an entire hatred of every ſin, comes unworthily; and it is as ſure, that he that doth entirely hate all ſin, will reſolve to forſake it: for you know forſaking naturally follows hatred, no Man willingly abides with a thing or perſon he hates. And therefore he that doth not ſo reſolve, as that God the ſearcher of hearts may approve it as ſincere, cannot be ſuppoſed to hate ſin, and ſo cannot be a worthy receiver of that holy Sacrament. Therefore try your reſolutions throughly, that you deceive not your ſelves in them; it

is your own great danger if ye do; for it is certain you cannot deceive God, nor gain acceptation from him by any thing which is not perfectly hearty and unfeigned.

Of the means.

13. Now as you are to resolve on this new obedience, so you are likewise to resolve on the means, which may assist you in the performance of it. And therefore consider in every duty what are the means that may help you in it, and resolve to make use of them, how uneasie soever they be to your flesh; so on the other side consider what things they are, that are likely to lead you to sin, and resolve to shun and avoid them: this you are to do in respect of all sins whatever, but especially in those, whereof you have formerly been guilty. For there it will not be hard for you to find, by what steps and degrees you were drawn into it, what company, what Occasion it was that ensnared you, as also to what sort of Temptations you are aptest to yield. And therefore you must particularly fence your self against the sin, by avoiding those occasions of it.

14. But it is not enough that you resolve you will do all this hereafter, but you must instantly set to it, and begin the course by doing at the present whatsoever you have opportunity of doing. And there are several things, which you may, nay, must do at the present, before you come to the Sacrament.

Present renouncing of sin.

15. As first you must cast off every sin, not bring any one unmortified lust with you to that

that Table; for it is not enough to purpoſe to caſt them off afterwards, but you muſt then actually do it by withdrawing all degrees of love and affection from them; you muſt then give a bill of divorce to all your old beloved ſins, or elſe you are in no way fit to be married to Chriſt. The reaſon of this is clear; for this Sacrament is our ſpiritual nouriſhment; now before we can receive ſpiritual nouriſhment we muſt have ſpiritual life, (for no Man gives food to a dead perſon.) But whoſoever continues not only in the act, but in the love of any one known ſin, hath no ſpiritual life, but is in God's account no better than a dead carcaſs, and therefore cannot receive that ſpiritual food. It is true, he may eat the Bread and drink the Wine, but he receives not Chriſt, but inſtead of him, that which is moſt dreadful; the Apoſtle will tell you what, 1 *Cor.* 11. 29. *He eats and drinks his own damnation.* Therefore you ſee how great a neceſſity lies on you thus actually to put off every ſin, before you come to this Table.

16. And the ſame neceſſity lies on you for a ſecond thing to be done at this time, and that is, the putting your ſoul into a heavenly and Chriſtian temper; by poſſeſſing it with all thoſe Graces which may render it acceptable in the eyes of God. For when you have turned out Satan and his accurſed train, you muſt not let your ſoul lie empty; if you do, Chriſt tells you, *Luke* 11. 26. he will *quickly return again, and your laſt eſtate ſhall be worſe than your firſt.* But *Imbracing vertue.*

you muſt by earneſt prayer invite into it the holy Spirit with his Graces, or if they be in ſome degree there already, you muſt pray that he will yet more fully poſſeſs it, and you muſt quicken and ſtir them up.

Quickening of graces.

17. As for example, you muſt quicken your humility, by conſidering your many and great ſins: your Faith by meditating on God's promiſes to all penitent ſinners: your love to God, by conſidering his mercies, eſpecially thoſe remembred in the Sacrament, his giving Chriſt to die for us; and your love to your neighbour, nay to your enemies, by conſidering that great example of his ſuffering for us that were enemies to him. And it is moſt particularly required of us when we come to this Table, that we copy out this pattern of his in a perfect forgiveneſs of all that have offended us, and not only forgiveneſs, but ſuch a kindneſs alſo as will expreſs it ſelf in all offices of love and friendſhip to them.

Charity.

18. And if you have formerly ſo quite forgot that bleſſed example of his, as to do the direct contrary; if you have done any unkindneſs or injury to any perſon, then you are to ſeek forgiveneſs from him: and to that end, firſt acknowledge your fault, and ſecondly reſtore to him, to the utmoſt of your power, whatſoever you have deprived him of, either in goods or credit. This Reconciliation with our brethren, is abſolutely neceſſary towards the making any of our ſervices acceptable with God, as appears by that precept

of

of Chriſt, *Matth.* 5. 23, 24. *If thou bring thy gift to the Altar, and there remembreſt that thy brother hath ought againſt thee, leave there thy gift before the Altar, and go thy way, firſt be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.* Where you ſee, that though the gift be already at the Altar, it muſt rather be left there unoffered, than be offered by a Man that is not at perfect peace with his neighbour. And if this charity be ſo neceſſary in all our ſervices, much more in this, whereby a joynt partaking in the ſame holy myſteries, we ſignifie our being united and knit not only to Chriſt our head, but alſo to each other, as fellow-members. And therefore if we come with any malice in our hearts, we commit an act of the higheſt Hypocriſie, by making a ſolemn profeſſion in the Sacrament of that charity and brotherly love, whereof our hearts are quite void.

19. Another moſt neceſſary grace at this time is that of Devotion, for the raiſing whereof we muſt allow our ſelves ſome time to withdraw from our worldly affairs, and wholly to ſet our ſelves to this buſineſs of preparation; one very ſpecial part of which preparation lies in raiſing up our ſouls to a devout and heavenly temper. And to that it is moſt neceſſary that we caſt off all thoughts of the world, for they will be ſure as ſo many clogs to hinder our ſouls in their mounting towards Heaven. A ſpecial exerciſe of this devotion is Prayer, wherein we muſt be very frequent and earneſt at our coming to the Sacrament, this being one great inſtrument wherein *Devotion.*

we muſt obtain all thoſe other graces required in our preparation. Therefore be ſure this be not omitted; for if you uſe never ſo much endeavour beſides, and leave out this, it is the going to work in your own ſtrength without looking to God for his help, and then it is impoſſible you ſhould proſper in it: *For we are not able of our ſelves to think any thing, as of our ſelves, but our ſufficiency is of God*, 2 *Cor.* 3. 5. Therefore be inſtant with him to aſſiſt you with his grace, that you may come ſo fitted to this Holy Table, that you may be partakers of the benefits there reached out to all worthy receivers.

Neceſſity of theſe graces.

20. Theſe and all other ſpiritual Graces our Souls muſt be cloathed with when we come to this Feaſt, for this is that Wedding-garment without which whoſoever comes is like to have the entertainment mentioned in the Parable of him who came to the marriage without a *Wedding garment*, Matth. 22. 13. *who was caſt into utter darkneſs, where is weeping and gnaſhing of teeth*; for though it is poſſible he may ſit it out at the preſent and not be ſnatcht from the Table, yet S. *Paul* aſſures him, *he drinks damnation to himſelf*, and how ſoon it may fall on him is uncertain: But it is ſure, it will, if repentance prevent it not, and as ſure that whenever it does come, it will be *intolerable: for who among us can dwell with everlaſting burnings?* Iſa. 33. 14.

The uſefulneſs of a ſpiritual guide.

21. I ſhall add but one thing more concerning the things which are to be done before the Sacrament, and that is an advice, that if

if any perſon upon a ſerious view of himſelf cannot ſatisfie his own Soul of his ſincerity, and ſo doubts whether he may come to the Sacrament, he do not reſt wholly on his own judgment in the caſe; for if he be a truly humbled Soul, it is likely he may judge too hardly of himſelf; if he be not, it is odds, but if he be left to the ſatisfying his own doubts, he will quickly bring himſelf to paſs too favourable a ſentence. Or whether he be the one or the other, if he come to the Sacrament in that doubt, he certainly plunges himſelf into farther doubts and ſcruples, if not into ſin; on the other ſide, if he forbear becauſe of it, if that fear be a cauſleſs one, then he groundleſly abſents himſelf from that Holy Ordinance. and ſo deprives his Soul of the benefits of it. Therefore in the midſt of ſo many dangers which attend the miſtake of himſelf, I would, as I ſaid before, exhort him not to truſt to his own judgment, but to make known his caſe to ſome diſcreet and Godly Miniſter, and rather be guided by his, who will probably (if the caſe be duly and without any diſguiſe diſcovered to him,) be better able to judge of him than he of himſelf. This is the Counſel the Church gives in the Exhortation before the Communion, where it is adviſed, that if any by other means there forementioned, *cannot quiet his own Conſcience, but require farther counſel and comfort*, then *let him go to ſome diſcreet and learned Miniſter of God's Word, and open his grief, that he may receive ſuch ghoſtly counſel, advice and comfort, that his conſcience may be relieved*, &c. This is ſurely ſuch advice as ſhould

not be neglected, neither at the time of coming to the Sacrament, nor any other, when we are under any fear or reaſons of doubt concerning the State of our Souls. And for want of this, many have run into very great miſchief, having let the doubt feſter ſo long that it hath either plunged them into deep diſtreſſes of Conſcience, or which is worſe, they have, to ſtill that diſquiet within them, betaken themſelves to all ſinful pleaſures, and ſo quite caſt off all care of their ſouls.

Not to be aſhamed to diſcover our ſelves to one.

22. But to all this, it will perhaps be ſaid, that this cannot be done without diſcovering the nakedneſs and blemiſhes of the ſoul, and there is ſhame in that, and therefore Men are unwilling to do it. But to that I anſwer, That it is very unreaſonable that ſhould be a hindrance: For firſt, I ſuppoſe you are to chuſe only ſuch a perſon as will faithfully keep any ſecret you ſhall commit to him, and ſo it can be no publick ſhame you can fear. And if it be in reſpect of that ſingle perſon, you need not fear that neither; for ſuppoſing him a Godly man, he will not think the worſe of you, but the better, that you are ſo deſirous to ſet all right between God and your Soul. But if indeed there were ſhame in it, yet as long as it may be a means to cure both your trouble and your ſin too (as certainly godly and faithful counſel may tend much to both) that ſhame ought to be deſpiſed, and it is ſure it would, if we loved our Souls as well as our Bodies; for in bodily diſeaſes be they never

ver ſo foul or ſhameful, we account him a fool who will rather miſs the cure than diſcover it: and then it muſt here be ſo much a greater folly, by how much the ſoul is more precious than the body.

23. But God knows it is not only doubtful perſons to whom this advice might be uſeful; there are others of another ſort, whoſe confidence is their diſeaſe, who preſume very groundleſly of the goodneſs of their eſtates: and for thoſe it were moſt happy, if they could be brought to hear ſome more equal judgments than their own in this ſo weighty a buſineſs. The truth is, we are generally ſo apt to favour our ſelves, that it might be very uſeful for the moſt, eſpecially the more ignorant ſort, ſometimes to adviſe with a ſpiritual guide, to enable them to paſs right judgments on themſelves; and not only ſo, but to receive directions; how to ſubdue and mortifie thoſe ſins they are moſt inclined to, which is a matter of ſo much difficulty, that we have no reaſon to deſpiſe any means that may help us in it. *As neceſſary to the confident as to the doubtful.*

24. I have now gone through thoſe ſeveral parts of duty we are to perform *Before* our Receiving; in the next place, I am to tell you, what is to be done *At the time of Receiving*. When thou art at the holy Table, firſt humble thy ſelf in an unfeigned acknowledgment of thy great unworthineſs to be admitted there; and to that *At the time of Receiving. Meditation of thy unworthineſs.*

purpoſe remember again between God and thine own Soul, ſome of thy greateſt, and fouleſt ſins, thy breaches of former vows made at that Table, eſpecially ſince thy laſt Receiving. Then meditate on thoſe Bitter Sufferings of Chriſt which are ſet out to us in the Sacrament: when thou ſeeſt the Bread broken, remember how his bleſſed Body was torn with nails upon the Croſs; when thou ſeeſt the Wine poured out, remember how his precious Bloud was ſpilt there; and then conſider, it was thy ſins that cauſed both. And here think how unworthy a wretch thou art to have done that which occaſioned ſuch torments to Him: how much worſe than his very crucifiers. They crucified him once, but thou haſt, as much as in thee lay, crucified him daily. They crucified him becauſe they knew him not, but thou haſt known both what he is in himſelf, *The Lord of Glory*, and what he is to thee, a moſt tender and merciful Saviour, and yet thou haſt ſtill continued thus to crucifie him afreſh. Conſider this, and let it work in thee, firſt a great ſorrow for thy ſins paſt, and then a great hatred and a firm reſolution againſt them for the time to come.

The ſufferings of Chriſt.

25. When thou haſt a while thus thought on theſe ſufferings of Chriſt for the increaſing thy humility and contrition; then in the ſecond place think of them again, to ſtir up thy faith; look on him as the Sacrifice offered up for thy ſins, for the appeaſing of God's wrath, and procuring his favour and

The atonement wrought by them.

and mercies towards thee. And therefore believingly, yet humbly beg of God to accept of that Satisfaction made by his innocent and beloved Son, and for the merits thereof to pardon thee whatever is paſt, and to be fully reconciled to thee.

The thankfulneſs owing for them.

26. In the third place conſider them again to raiſe thy thankfulneſs. Think how much both of ſhame and pain he there endured, but eſpecially thoſe great agonies of his Soul; which drew from him that bitter cry, *My God, my God, why haſt thou forſaken me? Matth.* 27. 45. Now all this he ſuffered only to keep thee from periſhing. And therefore conſider what unexpreſſible thanks thou oweſt him; and endeavour to raiſe thy Soul to the moſt zealous and hearty thanksgiving: for this is a principal part of duty at this time, the praiſing and magnifying that mercy which hath redeemed us by ſo dear a price. Therefore it will here well become thee to ſay with *David, I will take the Cup of Salvation, and will call upon the Name of the Lord.*

The great love of Chriſt in them.

27. Fourthly, look on theſe ſufferings of Chriſt to ſtir up this love; and ſurely there cannot be a more effectual means of doing it; for here the love of Chriſt to thee is moſt manifeſt, according to that of the Apoſtle, 1 *John* 3. 16. *Hereby perceive we the love of God towards us, becauſe he laid down his life for us.* And that even the higheſt degree of *love*, for as himſelf tells us, *John* 15. 13. *Greater love than*

than this hath no man, that a man lay down his life for his friend. Yet even greater love than this had he; for he not only died, but died the moſt painful and moſt reproachful death, and that not for his friends, but for his utter enemies. And therefore if after all this love on his part there be no return of love on ours, we are worſe than the vileſt ſort of Men, for even the *Publicans*, Matth. 5. 46. *love thoſe that love them.* Here therefore chide and reproach thy ſelf, that thy love to him is ſo faint and cool, when His to thee was ſo zealous and affectionate. And endeavour to enkindle this holy flame in thy Soul, to love him in ſuch a degree, that thou mayeſt be ready to copy out his example, to part with all things, yea, even life it ſelf whenever he calls for it, that is, whenſoever thy obedience to any command of his ſhall lay thee open to thoſe ſufferings: But in the mean time to reſolve never again to make any league with his enemies, to entertain or harbour any ſin in thy Breaſt. But if there have any ſuch hitherto remained with thee, make this the ſeaſon to kill and crucifie it; offer it up at this inſtant a ſacrifice to him who was ſacrificed for thee, and particularly for that very end that *he might redeem thee from all iniquity.* Therefore here make thy ſolemn reſolutions, to forſake every ſin, particularly thoſe into which thou haſt moſt frequently fallen. And that thou mayeſt indeed perform thoſe reſolutions, earneſtly beg of this crucified Saviour that he will, by the power of his death, mortifie and kill all thy corruptions.

28. When

28. When thou art about to receive the Conſecrated Bread and Wine, remember that God now offers to ſeal to thee that New Covenant made with Mankind in his Son. For ſince he gives that his Son in the Sacrament, he gives with him all the benefits of that Covenant, to wit, pardon of ſins, Sanctifying grace, and a Title to an eternal inheritance. And here be aſtoniſhed at the infinite goodneſs of God, who reaches out to thee ſo precious a treaſure. But then remember that this is all but on condition that thou perform thy part of the Covenant. And therefore ſettle in thy ſoul the moſt ſerious purpoſe of obedience, and then with all poſſible devotion joyn with the Miniſter in that ſhort, but excellent prayer, uſed at the inſtant of giving the Sacrament, *The body of our Lord*, &c.

The benefits of the New Covenant ſealed in the Sacrament.

29. So ſoon as thou haſt Received, offer up thy devouteſt Praiſes for that great mercy, together with thy moſt earneſt prayers for ſuch aſſiſtance of God's Spirit as may enable thee to perform the Vow thou haſt now made. Then remembring that Chriſt is *a propitiation not for our ſins only, but alſo for the ſins of the whole world*; let thy charity reach as far as his hath done, and pray for all Mankind that every one may receive the benefit of that Sacrifice of his; commend alſo to God the eſtate of the Church, that particularly whereof thou art a Member. And forget not to pray for all to whom thou oweſt Obedience, both

Upon receiving give thanks.

Pray.

both in Church and State; and ſo go on to pray for ſuch particular perſons as either thy Relations or their wants ſhall preſent to thee. If there be any Collection for the Poor (as there always ought to be at this time) give freely according to thy ability; or if by the default of others, there be no ſuch Collection, yet do thou privately deſign ſomething towards the relief of thy poor brethren, and be ſure to give it, the next fitting opportunity that offers it ſelf. All this thou muſt contrive to do in the time that others are receiving, that ſo when the publick prayers after the Adminiſtration begin, thou mayeſt be ready to joyn in them, which thou muſt likewiſe take care to do with all devotion: thus much for behaviour At the time of receiving.

After the Sacrament.

30. Now follows the third and laſt thing, that is, what thou art to do After thy Receiving. That which is immediately to be done, is as ſoon as thou art retired from the Congregation, to offer up again to God thy Sacrifice of Praiſe for all thoſe precious mercies conveyed to thee in that holy Sacrament, as alſo humbly to intreat the continued aſſiſtance of his grace to enable thee to make good all thoſe purpoſes of obedience thou haſt now made. And in whatſoever thou knoweſt thy ſelf moſt in danger, either in reſpect of any former habit, or natural inclination, there eſpecially deſire and earneſtly beg his aid.

Private prayer and thanksgiving.

31. When

31. When thou haſt done thus, do not preſently let thy ſelf looſe to thy worldly cares and buſineſs. But ſpend all that day either in meditating, praying, reading, good conferences, or the like; ſo as may beſt keep up that holy flame that is enkindled in thy heart. Afterwards when thy calling requires thee to fall to thy uſual affairs, do it, but yet ſtill remember that thou haſt a greater buſineſs than that upon thy hands; that is, the performing of all thoſe promiſes, thou ſo lately madeſt to God: and therefore whatever thy outward imployments are, let thy heart be ſet on that, keep all the particulars of thy reſolutions in memory, and whenever thou art tempted to any of thy old ſins, then conſider, this is the thing thou ſo ſolemnly vowedſt againſt, and withal remember what a horrible guilt it will be if thou ſhouldſt now wilfully do any thing contrary to that vow; yea, and what a horrible miſchief alſo it will be to thy ſelf. For at thy receiving, God and thou entredſt into Covenant, into a league of friendſhip and kindneſs. And as long as thou keepeſt in that friendſhip with God, thou art ſafe; all the malice of Men or Devils can do thee no harm: for as the Apoſtle ſaith, *Rom.* 8. 31. *If God be for us, who can be againſt us?* But if thou breakeſt this league (as thou certainly doſt, if thou yieldeſt to any

Not preſently to fall to worldly affairs.

To keep thy reſolutions ſtill in memory.

The danger of breaking them.

Making God thy enemy.

any wilful sin) then God and thou art enemies, and if all the World then were for thee, it could not avail thee.

Thy own Conscience.

32. Nay, thou wilt get an enemy within thine own bosom, thy conscience accusing and upbraiding thee; and when God and thine own conscience are thus against thee, thou canst not but be extremely miserable even in this life, besides that fearful expectation of wrath which awaits thee in the next. Remember all this when thou art set upon by any temptation, and then sure thou canst not but look upon that temptation as a cheat that comes to rob thee of thy Peace, thy God, thy very Soul. And then sure it will appear as unfit to entertain it, as thou wouldest think it to harbour one in thy house who thou knowest came to rob thee of what is dearest to thee.

God's former pardons no encouragement to sin.

33. And let not any experience of God's mercy in pardoning thee heretofore encourage thee again to provoke him; for besides that it is the highest degree of wickedness and unthankfulness to make that *goodness of his which should lead thee to repentance* an encouragement in thy sin: besides this, I say, the oftner thou hast been pardoned, the less reason thou hast to expect it again, because thy sin is so much the greater for having been committed against so much mercy. If a King have several times pardoned an offender, yet if he still return to commission of the same fault, the King will at last be forced if he have

any

any love to Juſtice, to give him up to it. Now ſo it is here, God is as well juſt as merciful, and his juſtice will at laſt ſurely and heavily avenge the abuſe of his Mercy; and there cannot be a greater abuſe of his mercy, than to ſin in hope of it: ſo that it will prove a miſerable deceiving of thy ſelf thus to preſume upon it.

34. Now this care of making good thy Vow muſt not abide with thee ſome few days only, and then be caſt aſide, but it muſt continue with thee all thy days. For if thou break thy Vow, it matters not whether ſooner or later. Nay, perhaps the guilt may in ſome reſpects be more, if it be late, for if thou haſt for a good while gone on in the obſervance of it, that ſhews the thing is poſſible to thee; and ſo thy after-breaches are not of infirmity, becauſe thou canſt not avoid them, but of perverſeneſs, becauſe thou wilt not. Beſides, the uſe of Chriſtian walking muſt needs make it more eaſie to thee. For indeed all the difficulty of it is but from the cuſtom of the contrary: And therefore if after ſome acquaintance with it, when thou haſt overcome ſomewhat of the hardneſs, thou ſhalt then give it over, it will be moſt inexcuſable. Therefore, be careful all the days of thy life to keep ſuch a watch over thy ſelf, and ſo to avoid all occaſions of temptations, as may preſerve thee from all wilful breaches of this vow. *The obligation of this vow perpetual.*

35. But though the obligation of every ſuch ſingle vow reach to the utmoſt day of our lives, yet are we often *Yet often to be renewed.*

often to renew it, that is, we are often to receive the holy Sacrament, for that being the means of conveying to us ſo great and unvaluable benefits, and it being alſo a command of Chriſt, that we ſhould *do this in remembrance of him*, we are in reſpect both of reaſon and duty to omit no fit opportunity of partaking of that holy Table. I have now ſhewed you what that reverence is which we are to pay to God in his Sacrament.

SUNDAY IV.

Honour due to God's name, Sins againſt it; Blaſphemy; Swearing; of Aſſertory, Promiſſory, Unlawful Oaths; of Perjury, vain Oaths, and the Sin of them, &c.

Honour due to God's Name.

Sect. 1. THE laſt thing wherein we are to expreſs our Reverence to him, is the honouring of his Name. Now what this Honouring of his Name is, we ſhall beſt underſtand by conſidering what are the things by which it is diſhonoured, the avoiding of which will be our way of honouring it.

The

The first is, all Blasphemies, or speaking any evil thing of God, the highest degree whereof is cursing him; or if we do not speak it with our mouths, yet if we do it in our hearts by thinking any unworthy thing of him, it is lookt on by God, who sees the heart, as the vilest dishonour. But there is also a Blasphemy of the actions, that is, when Men who profess to be the servants of God, live so wickedly that they bring up an evil report of him whom they own as their Master and Lord. This Blasphemy the Apostle takes notice of, *Rom.* 2. 24. where he tells those who profess to be observers of the Law, *That by their wicked actions, the Name of God was blasphemed among the Gentiles.* Those Gentiles were moved to think ill of God, as the favourer of sin, when they saw those, who called themselves his servants, commit it.

Sins against it.

Blasphemy.

A second way of Dishonouring God's Name is by swearing, and that is of two sorts, either by false Oaths, or else by rash and light ones. A false Oath may also be of two kinds, as first, that by which I affirm somewhat, or secondly, that by which I promise. The first is, when I say such or such a thing was done so or so, and confirm this saying of mine with an Oath, if then I know there be not perfect truth in what I say, this is a flat perjury, a down-right being forsworn: Nay, if I swear to the truth of that whereof I am only doubtful, though the thing should hap-

Swearing.

Assertory Oaths.

pen

pen to be true, yet it brings upon me the guilt of Perjury; for I ſwear at a venture, and the thing might for ought I knew be as well falſe as true; whereas I ought never to ſwear any thing, the truth of which I do not certainly know.

Promiſſory.

2. But beſides this ſort of Oaths, by which I affirm any thing, there is the other ſort, that by which I promiſe ſomewhat. And that promiſe may be either to God or Man. When it is to God, we call it a Vow, of which I have already ſpoken, under the heads of the Sacraments. I ſhall now only ſpeak of that to Man, and this may become a falſe oath, either at, or after the time of taking it. At the time of taking, it is falſe, if either I have then no real purpoſe of making it good, or elſe take it in a ſenſe different from that which I know he to whom I make the promiſe underſtands it; for the uſe of Oaths, being to aſſure the perſons to whom they are made, they muſt be taken in their ſenſe. But if I were never ſo ſincere at the taking the Oath, if afterwards I do not perform it, I am certainly perjured.

Unlawful Oaths.

3. The nature of an Oath being then thus binding, it nearly concerns us to look that the matter of our Oaths be lawful, for elſe we run our ſelves into a woful ſnare. For example, ſuppoſe I ſwear to kill a man, if I perform my oath, I am guilty of Murder; if I break it, of Perjury. And ſo I am under a neceſſity of ſinning one way or other: but there is nothing puts us under a greater degree of this unhappy neceſſity, than when we ſwear two Oaths, whereof the one is directly

directly croſs and contradictory to the other. For if I ſwear to give a Man my whole Eſtate, and afterwards ſwear to give all or part of that Eſtate to another, it is certain I muſt break my oath to one of them, becauſe it is impoſſible to perform it to both, and ſo I muſt be under a neceſſity of being forſworn. And into this unhappy ſtrait every Man brings himſelf that takes any oath which croſſes ſome other which he hath formerly taken; which ſhould make all, that love either God or their own ſouls, reſolve never thus miſerably to entangle themſelvs by taking one oath croſs and thwarting to another. But it may perhaps here be asked, what a perſon that hath already brought himſelf into ſuch a condition ſhall do; I anſwer he muſt firſt heartily repent of the great ſin of taking the unlawful oath, and then ſtick only to the lawful, which is all that is in his power towards the repairing his fault, and qualifying him for God's pardon for it.

God greatly diſhonoured by Perjury.

4. Having ſaid this concerning the kinds of this ſin of Perjury, I ſhall only add a few words to ſhew you how greatly God's Name is diſhonoured by it. In all oaths, you know, God is ſolemnly called to witneſs the truth of that which is ſpoken; now if the thing be falſe, it is the baſeſt affront and diſhonour that can poſſibly be done to God. For it is in reaſon to ſignifie one of theſe two things, either that we believe he knows not whether we ſay true or no; (and that is to make him no God, to ſuppoſe him to be as deceivable, and eaſie to be

be deluded as one of our ignorant neighbours) or elſe that he is willing to countenance our Lyes; the former robs him of that great Attribute of his, his knowing all things, and is ſurely a great diſhonouring of him, it being even amongſt Men accounted one of the greateſt diſgraces, to account a Man fit to have cheats put upon him; yet even ſo we deal with God, if we venture to forſwear upon a hope that God diſcerns it not. But the other is yet worſe, for the ſuppoſing him willing to countenance our lies, is the making him a party in them; and is not only the making him no God, (it being impoſſible that God ſhould either lie himſelf, or approve it in another) but is the making him like the very Devil. For he it is that is a liar, and the Father of it, *John* 8. 44. And ſurely I need not ſay more to prove that this is the higheſt degree of diſhonouring God's Name.

The puniſhments of it.

5. But if any yet doubt the hainouſneſs of this ſin, let him but conſider what God himſelf ſays of it in the Third Commandment, where he ſolemnly profeſſes, *He will not hold him guiltleſs that taketh his Name in vain*; And ſure the adding that to this Commandment, and none of the reſt, is the marking this out for a moſt hainous guilt. And if you look into *Zach.* 5. you will there find the puniſhment is anſwerable, even to the utter deſtruction, not only of the Man, but his Houſe alſo. Therefore it concerns all Men, as they love either their temporal or eternal welfare, to keep them moſt ſtrictly from this ſin.

But

But beſides this of forſwearing, I told you there was another ſort of Oaths by which God's Name is diſhonoured: thoſe are the vain and light Oaths, ſuch as are ſo uſual in our common diſcourſe, and are expreſly forbidden by Chriſt, *Matth.* 5. 34. *But I ſay unto you, Swear not at all, neither by Heaven, for it is God's throne, nor by the Earth, for it is his foot-ſtool:* where you ſee we are not allowed to ſwear even by meer creatures, becauſe of the relation they have to God. How great a wickedneſs is it then to prophane his holy Name by raſh and vain Oaths? This is a ſin that is (by I know not what charm of Satan's) grown into a faſhion among us; and now its being ſo, draws daily more Men into it. But it is to be remembred that when we ſhall appear before God's Judgment-ſeat to anſwer for thoſe profanations of his Name, it will be no excuſe to ſay, it was the faſhion to do ſo: it will rather be an increaſe of our guilt, that we have by our own practice helped to confirm that wicked cuſtom, which we ought to have beat down and diſcountenanced. *Vain Oaths.*

6. And ſure whatever this prophane Age thinks of it, this is a ſin of a very high nature. For beſides that it is a direct breach of the Precept of Chriſt, it ſhews firſt, a very mean and low eſteem of God: every oath we ſwear is the appealing to God to judge the truth of what we ſpeak, and therefore being of ſuch greatneſs and Majeſty, requires that the matter concerning which we thus appeal to him ſhould be of great *The ſin of them.*

great weight and moment, ſomewhat wherein either his own glory, or ſome conſiderable good of Man is concerned. But when we ſwear in common diſcourſe, it is far otherwiſe; and the triflingeſt or lighteſt thing ſerves for the matter of an Oath; nay, often Men ſwear to ſuch vain and fooliſh things, as a conſidering perſon would be aſhamed barely to ſpeak. And is it not a great deſpiſing of God to call him ſolemnly to judge in ſuch childiſh, ſuch wretched matters? God is the great King of the World; now though a King be to be reſorted unto in weighty caſes, yet ſure he would think himſelf much deſpiſed, if he ſhould be called to judge between Boys at their childiſh games: and God knows many things whereto we frequently ſwear, are not of greater weight, and therefore are a ſign that we do not rightly eſteem of God.

They lead to Perjury.

7. Secondly, This common ſwearing is a ſin which leads directly to the former of forſwearing; for he that by the uſe of ſwearing hath made Oaths ſo familiar to him, will be likely to take the dreadfulleſt Oath without much conſideration. For how ſhall he that ſwears hourly, look upon an Oath with any reverence? And he that doth not, it is his chance, not his care that is to be thanked, if he keep from Perjury. Nay, further; he that ſwears commonly, is not only prepared to forſwear when a ſolemn Oath is tendred him, but in all probability does actually forſwear himſelf often in theſe ſuddener Oaths; for ſuppoſing them to come from a Man ere he is aware (which is the

the beſt can be ſaid of them) what aſſurance can any Man have who ſwears ere he is aware, that he ſhall not lie ſo too: And if he doth both together, he muſt neceſſarily be forſworn. But he that obſerves your common ſwearers, will be put paſt doubt that they are often forſworn. For they uſually ſwear indifferently to things true or falſe, doubtful or certain. And I doubt not but if Men who are guilty of this ſin would but impartially examine their own practice, their hearts would ſecond me in this obſervation.

8. Thirdly, This is a ſin to which there is no temptation, there is nothing either of pleaſure or profit got by it: Moſt other ſins offer us ſomewhat either of the one or the other, but this is utterly empty of both. So that in this ſin the Devil does not play the Merchant for our Souls, as in others he does; he doth not ſo much as cheapen them, but we give them freely into his hands without any thing in exchange. There ſeems to be but one thing poſſible for Men to hope to gain by it, and that is to be believed in what they ſay, when they thus bind it by an oath. But this alſo they conſtantly fail of; for there are none ſo little believed as the common ſwearers. And good reaſon, for he that makes no conſcience thus to prophane God's Name, why ſhall any Man believe he makes any of lying? Nay, their forwardneſs to confirm every the ſlighteſt thing by an oath, rather gives jealouſie that they have ſome inward guilt of falſeneſs, for which that oath muſt be the cloak. And thus you ſee in how little ſtead it ſtands them,

No temptation to them.

them, even to this only purpose for which they can pretend it useful: and to any other advantage it makes not the least claim, and therefore is a sin without temptation, and consequently without excuse; for it shews the greatest contempt, nay, unkindness to God, when we will provoke him thus, without any thing to tempt us to it. And therefore though the commonness of this sin hath made it pass but for a small one, yet it is very far from being so either in it self, or in God's account.

Necessity of abstaining from them.

9. Let all therefore who are not yet fallen into the custom of this sin, be most careful never to yield to the least beginnings of it, and for those who are so miserable, as to be already ensnared in it, let them immediately, as they tender their Souls, get out of it. And let no Man plead the hardness of leaving an old custom, as an excuse for his continuing in it, but rather the longer he hath been in it, so much the more haste let him make out of it, as thinking it too too much, that he hath so long gone on in so great a sin. And if the length of the custom have increased the difficulty of leaving it, that is in all reason to make him set immediately to the casting it off, lest that difficulty at last grow to an impossibility; and the harder he finds it at the present, so much the more diligent and watchful he must be in the use of all those means, which may tend to the overcoming that sinful habit, some few of those means it will not be amiss here to mention.

Means for it.

10. First,

10. First, let him poſſeſs his mind fully of the hainouſneſs of the ſin, and not to meaſure it only according to the common rate of the World. And when he is fully perſwaded of the guilt, then let him add to that, the conſideration of the danger, as that it puts him out of God's favour at the preſent, and will, if he continue in it, caſt him into Hell for ever. And ſure if this were but throughly laid to heart, it would reſtrain this ſin. For I would ask a man, that pretends impoſſibility of leaving the cuſtom, whether if he were ſure he ſhould be hanged the next Oath he ſwore, the fear of it would not keep him from ſwearing? I can ſcarce believe any man in his wits ſo little Maſter of himſelf, but it would. And then ſurely damning is ſo much worſe than hanging, that in all reaſon the fear of that ought to be a much greater reſtraint. The doubt is, men do either not heartily believe that this ſin will damn them, or if they do, they look on it, as a thing a great way off, and ſo are not much moved with it; but both theſe are very unreaſonable. For the firſt, it is certain, that every one that continues wilfully in any ſin, is ſo long in a ſtate of damnation, and therefore this being ſo continued in, muſt certainly put a man in that condition. For the ſecond it is very poſſible, he may be deceived in thinking it ſo far off, for how knows any Man that he ſhall not be ſtruck dead with an Oath in his mouth? Or if he were ſure not to be ſo, yet eternal damnation is ſurely to be dreaded above all things, be it at what diſtance ſoever. *Senſe of the guilt and danger.*

Truth in ſpeaking.

11. A ſecond means is to be exactly true in all thou ſpeakeſt; that all men may believe thee on thy bare word, and then thou wilt never have occaſion to confirm it by an oath, to make it more credible, which is the only colour or reaſon can at any time be pretended for ſwearing.

Forſaking the occaſions.

12. Thirdly, Obſerve what it is that moſt betrays thee to this ſin, whether drink, or anger, or the company and example of others, or whatever elſe, and then if ever thou mean to forſake the ſin, forſake thoſe occaſions of it.

Reverence of God.

13. Fourthly, Endeavour to poſſeſs thy heart with a continual Reverence of God, and if that once grow into a cuſtom with thee, it will quickly turn out that contrary one of profaning. Uſe and accuſtom thy ſelf therefore to this reverence of God, and particularly to ſuch a reſpect to his Name, as, if it be poſſible, never to mention it without ſome lifting up of thy heart to him. Even in thy ordinary diſcourſe, whenever thou takeſt his Name into thy mouth, let it be an occaſion of raiſing up thy thoughts to him, but by no means permit thy ſelf to uſe it in idle by-words, or the like. If thou doſt accuſtom thy ſelf to pay this reverence to the bare mention of his Name, it will be an excellent fence againſt the profaning it in oaths.

14. A fifth means is a diligent and constant watch over thy self, that thou thus *offend not with thy tongue*, without which all the former will come to nothing. And the last means is Prayer, which must be added to all thy endeavours: therefore pray earnestly, that God will enable thee to overcome this wicked custom; say with the *Psalmist*, *Set a watch O Lord, over my mouth, and keep the door of my lips*; and if thou dost sincerely set thy self to the use of means for it, thou mayest be assured God will not be wanting in his assistance. I have been the longer on this, because it is so reigning a sin. God in his mercy give all that are guilty of it, a true sight of the hainousness of it.

Watchfulness.

Prayer.

15. By these several ways of dishonouring God's Name you may understand what is the duty of honouring it, *viz.* A strict abstaining from every one of these, and that abstinence founded on an awful respect and reverence to that sacred Name which is Great, Wonderful and Holy, *Psal.* 99. 3. I have now past through the several branches of that great Duty of honouring of God.

What it is to honour God's Name.

Robert Goddard Manchester

SUNDAY V.

Of worſhip due to God's Name. Of Prayer and its ſeveral parts. Of publick Prayers in the Church, in the Family. Of Private Prayer. Of Repentance, &c. Of Faſting.

Worſhip.

Sect. 1. THE Eighth Duty we owe to GOD is WORSHIP; this is that great Duty by which eſpecially we acknowledg his Godhead, worſhip being proper only to God, and therefore it is to be lookt on as a moſt weighty duty. This is to be performed, firſt, by our Souls, ſecondly, by our Bodies: the Soul's part is Praying. Now prayer is a ſpeaking to God, and there are divers parts of it, according to the different things about which we ſpeak.

Prayer, its parts.

Confeſſion.

2. As firſt, there is confeſſion, that is, the acknowledging our ſins to God. And this may be either general or particular; the general is when we only confeſs in groſs, that we are ſinful; the particular, when we mention the ſeveral ſorts and acts of our ſins. The former is neceſſary to be always a part of our ſolemn prayers, whether publick

or

or private. The latter is proper for private prayer, and there the oftner it is uſed the better; yea, even in our daily private prayer it will be fit conſtantly to remember ſome of our greateſt and fouleſt ſins, though never ſo long ſince paſt. For ſuch we ſhould never think ſufficiently confeſſed and bewailed. And this bewailing muſt always go along with Confeſſion; we muſt be heartily ſorry for the ſins we confeſs, and from our ſouls acknowledge our own great unworthineſs in having committed them. For our confeſſion is not intended to inſtruct God, who knows our ſins much better than our ſelves do, but it is to humble our ſelves, and therefore we muſt not think to have confeſt aright till that be done.

3. The ſecond part of prayer is Petition, that is, the begging of God whatſoever we want, either for our Souls or Bodies. For our Souls we muſt firſt beg pardon of ſins and that for the ſake of Jeſus Chriſt, who ſhed his bloud to obtain it. Then we muſt alſo beg the grace and aſſiſtance of God's Spirit, to enable us to forſake our ſins, and to walk in obedience to him. And herein it will be needful particularly to beg all the ſeveral vertues, as Faith, Love, Zeal, Purity, Repentance, and the like, but eſpecially thoſe which thou moſt wanteſt; and therefore obſerve what thy wants are, and if thou beeſt proud, be moſt inſtant in praying for Humility; if luſtful, for Chaſtity, and ſo for all other Graces, according as thou findeſt thy needs. And in all theſe things that

Petition.

For our Souls.

concern thy Soul, be very earneſt and importunate, take no denial from God, nor give over, though thou do not preſently obtain what thou ſueſt for. But if thou haſt never ſo long prayed for a grace, and yet findeſt it not, do not grow weary of praying, but rather ſearch what the cauſe may be which makes thy prayers ſo ineffectual; ſee if thou do not thy ſelf hinder them; perhaps thou prayeſt to God to enable thee to conquer ſome ſin, and yet never goeſt about to fight againſt it, never makeſt any reſiſtance, but yieldeſt to it as often as it comes, nay, putteſt thy ſelf in its way, in the road of all temptations. If it be thus, no wonder though thy prayers avail not, for thou wilt not let them. Therefore amend this, and ſet to the doing of thy part ſincerely, and then thou needeſt not fear but God will do his.

Bodies. 4. Secondly, we are to petition alſo for our bodies; that is, we are to ask of God ſuch neceſſaries of life as are needful to us, whilſt we live here. But theſe only in ſuch a degree and meaſure, as his wiſdom ſees beſt for us: we muſt not preſume to be our own carvers, and pray for all that wealth or greatneſs, which our own vain hearts may perhaps deſire, but only for ſuch a condition, in reſpect of outward things, as he ſees may moſt tend to thoſe great ends of our living here, the glorifying him, and the ſaving of our own Souls.

Deprecation. 3. A third part of Prayer is Deprecation, that is, when we pray to God to turn away ſome evil from us. Now

Now the evil may be either the evil of ſin, or the evil of puniſhment. The evil of Sin is that we are eſpecially to pray againſt, moſt earneſtly begging of God, that he will by the power of his grace, preſerve us from falling into ſin. And whatever ſins they are, to which thou knoweſt thy ſelf moſt inclined, there be particularly earneſt with God to preſerve thee from them. This is to be done daily, but then more eſpecially, when we are under any preſent temptation, and in danger of falling into any ſin: in which caſe we have reaſon to cry out as *S. Peter* did when he found himſelf ſinking, *Save, Lord, or I periſh*, humbly beſeeching him either to withdraw the temptation, or ſtrengthen us to withſtand it, neither of which we can do for our ſelves. *Of Sin.*

6. Secondly, We are likewiſe to pray againſt the evil of puniſhment, but principally againſt Spiritual puniſhments, as the anger of God, the withdrawing of his Grace, and Eternal damnation. Againſt theſe we can never pray with too much earneſtneſs. But we may alſo pray againſt temporal puniſhments, that is, any outward affliction, but this with ſubmiſſion to God's will, according to the example of Chriſt, *Matth.* 26. 39. *Not as I will but as thou wilt.* *Of puniſhment.*

7. A fourth part of Prayer is Interceſſion, that is, praying for others. This in general we are to do for all Mankind, as well ſtrangers as acquaintance, but more particularly *Interceſſion.*

thoſe to whom we have any ſpecial Relation, either publick, as our Governours both in Church and State; or private, as Parents, Husbands, Wife, Children, Friends, *&c.* We are alſo to pray for all that are in affliction, and ſuch particular perſons as we diſcern eſpecially to be ſo. Yea, we are to pray for thoſe that have done us injury, thoſe *that deſpitefully uſe and perſecute us*, for it is expreſly the command of Chriſt, *Matth.* 5.44. and that whereof he hath likewiſe given us the higheſt example in praying even for his very crucifiers, *Luke* 23. 34. *Father, forgive them.* For all theſe ſorts of perſons we are to pray, and that for the very ſame good things we beg of God for our ſelves, that God would give them in their ſeveral places and callings all ſpiritual and temporal bleſſings which he ſees wanting to them, and turn away from them all evil, whether of ſin or puniſhment.

Thanksgiving.

8. The fifth part of prayer is Thankſgiving; that is, the Praiſing and Bleſſing God for all his mercies, whether to our own perſons, and thoſe that immediately relate to us, or to the Church and Nation whereof we are Members, or yet more general to all Mankind; and this for all his mercies both ſpiritual and temporal. In the Spiritual, firſt, for thoſe wherein we are all in common concerned, as the giving of his Son, the ſending of his Spirit, and all thoſe means he hath uſed to bring ſinful Men unto himſelf. Then ſecondly, for thoſe Mercies we have in our own particulars received, ſuch are the having been born within the pale of the Church, and

ſo

ſo brought up in Chriſtian Religion, by which we have been partakers of thoſe precious advantages of the Word and Sacraments, and ſo have had, without any care or pains of ours, the means of eternal life put into our hands. But beſides theſe there is none of us but have received other ſpiritual mercies from God.

Spiritual Mercies.

9. As firſt, God's patience and long-ſuffering, waiting for our Repentance, and not cutting us off in our Sins. Secondly, his calls and invitations of us to that repentance, not only outward in the Miniſtery of the Word, but alſo inward, by the motions of his Spirit. But then if thou be one that haſt by the help of God's grace been wrought upon by theſe calls, and brought from a prophane or worldly, to a Chriſtian courſe of life, thou art ſurely in the higheſt degree tyed to magnifie and praiſe his goodneſs, as having received from him the greateſt of mercies.

Temporal.

10. We are likewiſe to give thanks for Temporal Bleſſings, whether ſuch as concern the publick, as the proſperity of the Church or Nation, and all remarkable deliverances afforded to either; or elſe ſuch as concern our particular; ſuch are all the good things of this life which we enjoy; as Health, Friends, Food, Rayment, and the like; alſo for thoſe minutely preſervations whereby we are by God's Gracious Providence kept from danger, and the eſpecial deliverances which God hath given us in the time of greateſt perils. It will be impoſſible to ſet down the ſeveral

ral mercies which every Man receives from God, becauſe they differ in kind and degree between one Man and another. But it is ſure that he which receives leaſt, hath yet enough to employ his whole life in praiſes to God. And it will be very fit for every Man to conſider the ſeveral paſſages of his life, and the mercies he hath in each received, and ſo to gather a kind of Liſt or Catalogue of them, at leaſt the principal of them, which he may always have in his memory, and often with a thankful heart repeat before God.

Publick Prayers in the Church.

11. Theſe are the ſeveral parts of Prayer, and all of them to be uſed both publickly and privately. The publick uſe of them, is firſt, that in the Church, where all meet to joyn in thoſe prayers wherein they are in common concerned. And in this (where the prayers are ſuch as they ought to be) we ſhould be very conſtant, there being an eſpecial bleſſing promiſed to the joynt requeſts of the faithful; and he that without a neceſſury cauſe abſtents himſelf from ſuch publick prayers, cuts himſelf off from the Church, which hath always been thought ſo unhappy a thing, that it is the greateſt puniſhment the Governours of the Church can lay upon the worſt offender; and therefore it is a ſtrange madneſs for Men to inflict it upon themſelves.

In the Family.

12. A ſecond ſort of publick prayer is that in a Family, where all that are Members of it joyn in their common ſupplications; and this

this alſo ought to be very carefully attended to, firſt by the Maſter of the Family, who is to look that there be ſuch prayers, it being as much his part thus to provide for the Souls of his Children and Servants, as to provide food for their Bodies. Therefore there is none even the meaneſt houſholder, but ought to take this care. If either himſelf or any of his Family can read, he may uſe ſome prayers out of ſome good Book; if it be the Service-Book of the Church, he makes a good choice: if they cannot read, it will then be neceſſary they ſhould be taught without Book, ſome form of Prayer which they may uſe in the Family, for which purpoſe again ſome of the Prayers of the Church will be very fit, as being moſt eaſie for their memories by reaſon of their ſhortneſs, and yet containing a great deal of matter. But what choice ſoever they make of prayers, let them be ſure to have ſome, and let no Man that profeſſes himſelf a Chriſtian, keep ſo heatheniſh a family, as not to ſee God be daily worſhipped in it. But when the Maſter of a Family hath done his duty in this providing, it is the duty of every Member of it to make uſe of that proviſion, by being conſtant and diligent at thoſe Family Prayers.

13. Private or ſecret Prayer is that which is uſed by a Man alone apart from all others, wherein we are to be more particular according to our particular needs, than in publick it is fit to be. And this of private prayer is a duty which will not be excuſed by the performance of the other of publick. They are both required, and one muſt *Private Prayer.*

muſt not be taken in exchange for the other. And whoever is diligent in publick prayers, and yet negligent in private, it is much to be feared he rather ſeeks to approve himſelf to Men than to God; contrary to the command of our Saviour, *Matth.* 6. who enjoyns this private prayer, this *praying to our father in ſecret*, from whom alone we are to expect our reward, and not from the vain praiſes of Men.

Frequency in prayer.

14. Now this duty of Prayer is to be often performed, by none ſeldomer than Evening and Morning, it being moſt neceſſary that we ſhould thus begin and end all our works with God, and that not only in reſpect of the duty we owe him, but alſo in reſpect of our ſelves who can never be either proſperous or ſafe, but by committing our ſelves to him; and therefore ſhould tremble to venture on the perils either of day or night without his ſafeguard. How much oftner this duty is to be performed, muſt be judged according to the buſineſs or leiſure Men have: where, by buſineſs, I mean not ſuch buſineſs as Men unprofitably make to themſelves, but the neceſſary buſineſs of a Man's Calling, which with ſome will not afford them much time for ſet and ſolemn Prayer. But even theſe Men may often in a day lift up their hearts to God in ſome ſhort prayers even whilſt they are at their work. As for thoſe that have more leiſure, they are in all reaſon to beſtow more time upon this duty. And let no Man that can find time to beſtow upon his vanities, nay, perhaps his ſins, ſay he wants leiſure for Prayer, but let him now endeavour

endeavour to redeem what he hath miſ-ſpent, by imploying more of that leiſure in this duty for the future: and ſurely if we did but rightly weigh how much it is our own advantage to perform this duty, we ſhould think it wiſdom to be as frequent as we are ordinarily ſeldom in it. *The advantages of Prayer.*

15. For firſt, it is a great Honour for us poor worms of the earth to be allowed to ſpeak ſo freely to the Majeſty of Heaven. If a King ſhould but vouchſafe to let one of his meaneſt Subjects talk familiarly and freely with him, it would be lookt on as a huge honour; that Man how deſpicable ſoever he were before, would then be the envy of all his neighbours; and there is little queſtion he would be willing to take all opportunities of receiving ſo great a grace. But alas! this is nothing to the honour is offered us, who are allowed, nay invited to ſpeak to, and converſe with the King of kings; and therefore how forward ſhould we in all reaſon be to it? *Honour.*

16. Secondly, it is a great Benefit, even the greateſt that can be imagined; for Prayer is the inſtrument of fetching down all good things to us, whether ſpiritual or temporal, no prayer, that is qualified as it ought to be, but is ſure to bring down a bleſſing, according to that of the Wiſe man, *Eccluſ.* 35. 17. *The prayer of the humble pierceth the clouds, and will not turn away till the higheſt regard it.* You would think him a happy Man that had one certain means of helping him to whatever he wanted, *Benefits.*

wanted, though it were to coſt him much pain and labour; now this happy Man thou mayeſt be if thou wilt. Prayer is the never-failing means of bringing thee, if not all that thou thinkeſt thou wanteſt, yet all that indeed thou doſt, that is, all that God ſees fit for thee. And therefore be there never ſo much wearineſs to thy fleſh in the duty, yet conſidering in what continual want thou ſtandeſt of ſomething or other from God, it is a madneſs to let that uneaſineſs diſhearten thee, and keep thee from this ſo ſure means of ſupplying thy wants.

Pleaſantneſs.

17. But in the third place, this duty is in it ſelf ſo far from being uneaſie, that it is very pleaſant. God is the fountain of happineſs, *and at his right hand are pleaſures for evermore*, *Pſalm* 16. 11. And therefore the nearer we draw to him, the happier we muſt needs be, the very joys of Heaven ariſing from our nearneſs to God. Now in this life we have no way of drawing ſo near to him as by this of Prayer, and therefore ſurely it is that which in it ſelf is apt to afford abundance of delight and pleaſure; if it ſeem otherwiſe to us, it is from ſome diſtemper of our own hearts, which like a ſick palate cannot reliſh the moſt pleaſant meat. Prayer is a pleaſant duty, but it is withal a ſpiritual one; and therefore if thy heart be carnal; if that be ſet either on the contrary pleaſures of the fleſh, or droſs of the world: no marvel then if thou taſte no pleaſantneſs in it, if like the *Iſraelites*

Carnality one reaſon of its ſeeming otherwiſe.

lites thou deſpiſe Manna while thou longeſt after the fleſh-pots of *Egypt*. Therefore if thou find a wearineſs in this duty, ſuſpect thy ſelf, purge and refine thy heart from the love of all ſin, and endeavour to put it into a heavenly and ſpiritual frame, and then thou wilt find this no unpleaſant exerciſe, but full of delight and ſatisfaction. In the mean time complain not of the hardneſs of the duty, but of the untowardneſs of thy own heart.

18. But there may alſo be another reaſon of its ſeeming unpleaſant to us, and that is want of uſe. You know there are many things, which ſeem uneaſie at the firſt trial, which yet after we are accuſtomed to them ſeem very delightful, and if this be thy caſe, then thou knoweſt a ready cure, *viz.* to uſe it oftner, and ſo this conſideration naturally inforces the exhortation, of being frequent in this duty. *Want of uſe another.*

19. But we are not only to conſider how often, but how well we perform it. Now to do it well we are to reſpect, firſt the matter of our Prayers, to look that we ask nothing that is unlawful, as revenge upon our enemies, or the like: ſecondly, the manner; and that muſt be firſt in Faith; we muſt believe, that if we ask as we ought, God will either give us the thing we ask for, or elſe ſomething which he ſees better for us. And then ſecondly in humility, we muſt acknowledge our ſelves utterly unworthy *To ask nothing unlawful.* *To ask in Faith.* *In humility.*

worthy of any of thoſe good things we beg for, and therefore ſue for them only for Chriſt's ſake; thirdly, with attention, we muſt mind what we are about, and not ſuffer our ſelves to be carried away to the thought of other things. I told you at the firſt, that prayer was the buſineſs of the Soul, but if our minds be wandring, it is the work only of the tongue and lips, which make it in Gods account no better than vain babling, and ſo will never bring a bleſſing on us. Nay, as *Jacob* ſaid to his Mother, *Gen.* 27. 12. it will be more likely to bring a curſe on us than a bleſſing, for it is a profaning one of the moſt ſolemn parts of God's ſervice, it is a piece of Hypocriſie, the *drawing near to him with our lips, when our hearts are far from him*, and a great ſlighting and deſpiſing that dreadful Majeſty we come before; and as to our ſelves it is a moſt ridiculous folly, that we who come to God upon ſuch weighty errands, as are all the concernments of our ſouls and bodies, ſhould in the midſt forget our buſineſs, and purſue every the lighteſt thing that either our own vain fancies or the Devil, whoſe buſineſs it is here to hinder us, can offer to us. It is juſt as if a Malefactor, that comes to ſue for his life to the King, ſhould in the midſt of his ſupplication happen to eſpy a Butter-fly, and then ſhould leave his ſuit, and run a chaſe after that Butter-fly: would you not think it pity, a pardon ſhould be caſt away upon ſo wretchleſs a creature? And ſure it will be as unreaſonable to expect that God ſhould attend and grant thoſe ſuits of ours, which we do not at all conſider our ſelves.

With attention.

20. This

20. This wandring in Prayer is a thing we are much concerned to arm our ſelves againſt, it being that to which we are naturally wonderful prone. To that end it will be neceſſary firſt to poſſeſs our hearts at our coming to Prayers with the greatneſs of that Majeſty we are to approach, that ſo we may dread to be vain and trifling in his preſence. Secondly, we are to conſider the great concernment of the things we are to ask, ſome whereof are ſuch, that if we ſhould not be heard, we were of all creatures the moſt miſerable, and yet this wandring is the way to keep us from being heard. Thirdly, we are to beg God's aid in this particular: And therefore when thou ſetteſt to prayer, let thy firſt petitions be for this grace of attention.

Helps againſt wandring.

Conſideration of God's Majeſty.

Our needs.

Prayer for God's aid.

21. Laſtly, be as watchful as is poſſible over thy heart in time of prayer, to keep out all wandring thoughts, or, if any have gotten in, let them not find entertainment, but as ſoon as ever thou diſcerneſt them, ſuffer them not to abide one moment, but caſt them out with indignation, and beg God's pardon for them. And if thou doſt thus ſincerely, and diligently ſtrive againſt them, either God will enable thee in ſome meaſure to overcome, or he will in his mercy pardon thee what thou canſt not prevent; But

Watchfulneſs.

But if it be through thy own negligence, thou art to expect neither, ſo long as that negligence continues.

With zeal. 22. In the fourth place, we muſt look our Prayers be with zeal and earneſtneſs; it is not enough that we ſo far attend them as barely to know what it is we ſay; but we muſt put forth all the affection and devotion of our ſouls, and that according to the ſeveral parts of prayer before mentioned. It is not the cold, faint requeſt that will ever obtain from God: we ſee it will not from our ſelves; for if a beggar ſhould ask relief from us, and do it in ſuch a ſcornful manner, that he ſeem'd indifferent whether he had it or no, we ſhould think he had either little want, or great pride; and ſo have no heart to give him. Now ſurely the things we ask from God are ſo much above the rate of an ordinary Alms, that we can never expect they ſhould be given to ſlight and heartleſs petitions. No more in like manner will our Sacrifice of praiſe and thankſgiving ever be accepted by him, if it be not offered from a heart truly affected with the ſenſe of his mercies; it is but a kind of formal complementing which will never be approved by him who requires the heart, and not the lips only. And the like may be ſaid of all the other parts of Prayer. Therefore be careful when thou draweſt nigh to God in Prayer, to raiſe up thy ſoul to the higheſt pitch of zeal and earneſtneſs thou art able. And becauſe of thy ſelf alone thou art not able to do any thing, beſeech God that he will inflame thy heart with this heavenly fire of Devotion, and when

when thou haſt obtained it, beware that thou neither quench it by any wilful ſin, nor let it go out again for want of ſtirring it up and imploying it.

23. Fifthly, We muſt Pray with Purity, I mean, we muſt purge our hearts from all affections to ſin. This is ſurely the meaning of the Apoſtle, 1 *Tim.* 2. 8. when he commands Men to *lift up holy hands in Prayer*, and he there inſtances in one ſpecial ſort of ſin, wrath and doubting; where by doubting is meant thoſe unkind diſputes and contentions which are ſo common amongſt Men. And ſurely he that cheriſhes that or any other ſin in his heart, can never lift up thoſe holy hands which are required in this duty. And then ſure his prayers, be they never ſo many or earneſt, will little avail him. The Pſalmiſt will tell him, he ſhall not be heard, *Pſalm* 66. 18. *If I regard iniquity in my heart, the Lord will not hear me.* Nay, *Solomon* will tell him yet worſe, that his prayers are not only vain, but abominable, *Prov.* 15. 8. *The ſacrifice of the wicked is an abomination to the Lord.* And thus to have our prayers turned into ſin, is one of the heavieſt things that can befal any Man. We ſee it is ſet down in that ſad Catalogue of curſes, *Pſalm* 109. 7. Therefore let us not be ſo cruel to our ſelves as to pull it upon our own heads, which we certainly do if we offer up prayers from an impure heart. *With purity.*

24. In the laſt place we muſt direct our prayers to right ends; and that either in reſpect of the prayer it ſelf, *To right ends.*

ſelf, or the things we pray for; Firſt, we muſt pray, not to gain the praiſe of devotion amongſt Men, like thoſe hypocrites, *Matt.* 6. 5. nor yet only for company or faſhion ſake to do as others do: but we muſt do it, firſt as an act of worſhip to God, ſecondly, as an acknowledgment, that he is that great ſpring, from whence alone we expect all good things; and thirdly, to gain a ſupply of our own or others needs. Then in reſpect of the Things prayed for; we muſt be ſure to have no ill aims upon them; we muſt not ask that we *may conſume it upon our luſts*, *James* 4. 3. as thoſe do who pray for wealth that they may live in riot and exceſs, and for power, that they may be able to miſchief their enemies, and the like. But our end in all muſt be God's glory firſt, and next that, our own and others Salvation; and all other things muſt be taken in only as they tend to thoſe, which they can never do if we abuſe them to ſin. I have now done with that firſt part of worſhip, that of the Soul.

Bodily worſhip.

25. The other is that of the Body, and that is nothing elſe but ſuch humble and reverent geſtures in our approaches to God, as may both expreſs the inward reverence of our Souls, and may alſo pay him ſome tribute from our very Bodies, with which the Apoſtle commands us to glorifie God, as well as with our Souls; and good reaſon, ſince he hath created and redeemed the one as well as the other: whenſoever therefore thou offereſt thy prayers unto God, let it be with all lowlineſs as well of body as of mind,

mind, according to that of the Pſalmiſt, *Pſal.* 95. 6. *O come let us worſhip, let us fall down and kneel before the Lord our Maker.*

26. The ninth DUTY to God is REPENTANCE: That this is a duty to God we are taught by the Apoſtle, *Acts* 20. 21. where ſpeaking of repentance, he ſtiles it *repentance towards God.* And there is good reaſon this ſhould be a duty to him, ſince there is no ſin we commit but is either mediately or immediately againſt him. For though there be ſins both againſt our ſelves and our neighbours, yet they being forbidden by God, they are alſo breaches of his Commandments, and ſo ſins againſt him. *Repentance.*

This repentance is, in ſhort, nothing but a turning from ſin to God, the caſting off all our former evils, and inſtead thereof conſtantly practiſing all thoſe Chriſtian duties which God requireth of us. And this is ſo neceſſary a duty, that without it we certainly periſh: we have Chriſt's word for it, *Luke* 13. 5. *Except ye repent, ye ſhall all likewiſe periſh.* *A turning from ſin to God.*

27. The directions for performing the ſeveral parts of this duty have been already given in the preparation to the Lord's Supper, and thither I refer the Reader. Only I ſhall here mind him, that it is not to be lookt upon as a duty to be practiſed only at the time of receiving the Sacrament. For this being the only remedy againſt the poyſon of ſin, we muſt renew it as often as we repeat our ſins, that is, daily. I *Times for this duty.*

mean

mean we muſt every day repent of the
Daily. ſins of that day. For what Chriſt ſaith of other evils, is true alſo of this, *Sufficient to the day is the evil thereof*; we have ſins enough of each day to exerciſe a daily repentance, and therefore every Man muſt thus daily call himſelf to account.

28. But as it is in accounts, they
At ſet times. who conſtantly ſet down their daily expences, have yet ſome ſet time of caſting up the whole ſumm, as at the end of the Week or Month; ſo ſhould it alſo be here, we ſhould ſet aſide ſome time to humble our ſelves ſolemnly before God for the ſins, not of that day only, but of our whole lives. And the frequenter theſe times are, the better. For the oftner we thus caſt up our accounts with God, and ſee what vaſt debts we are run in to him, the more humbly ſhall we think of our ſelves, and the more ſhall thirſt after his mercy, which two are the ſpecial things that muſt qualifie us for his pardon. He therefore that can aſſign himſelf one day in the week for this purpoſe, will take a thriving courſe for his ſoul. Or if any Man's ſtate of life be ſo buſie as not to afford him to do it ſo often, let him yet come as near to that frequency as is poſſible for him, remembring always, that none of his worldly imployments can bring him in near ſo gainful a return as this ſpiritual one will do, and therefore it is very ill husbandry to purſue them to the neglect of this.

29. Beſides theſe conſtant times,
In the time of affliction. there are likewiſe occaſional times for the performance of this duty; ſuch

ſuch eſpecially are the times of calamity and affliction; for when any ſuch befals us, we are to look on it as a meſſage ſent from Heaven to call us to this duty, and therefore muſt never neglect it when we are thus ſummoned to it, leſt we be of the number of them who *deſpiſe the chaſtiſements of the Lord*, Heb. 12. 5.

At death.

30. There is yet another time of repentance, which in the practice of Men hath gotten away the cuſtom from all thoſe, and that is the time of death, which it is true, is a time very fit to renew our repentance, but ſure not proper to begin it: and it is a moſt deſperate madneſs for Men to defer it till then. For to ſay the mildeſt of it, it is the venturing our Souls upon ſuch miſerable uncertainties as no wiſe Man would truſt with any thing of the leaſt value.

The danger of deferring it till then.

For firſt, I would ask any Man that means to repent at his death, how he knows he ſhall have an Hours time for it? Do we not daily ſee Men ſnatcht away in a moment! And who can tell that it ſhall not be his own caſe? But ſecondly, ſuppoſe he have a more leiſurely death, that ſome diſeaſe give him warning of its approach, yet perhaps he will not underſtand that warning, but will ſtill flatter himſelf, as very often ſick people do, with hopes of life to the laſt: and ſo his death may be ſudden to him, though it comes by never ſo ſlow degrees. But again, thirdly, if he do diſcern his danger, yet how is he ſure he ſhall then be able to repent? Repentance is a grace of

God, not at our command; and it is juſt and uſual with God, when Men have a long time refuſed and rejected that grace, reſiſted all his calls and invitations to converſion and amendment, to give them over at laſt to the hardneſs of their own hearts, and not to afford them any more of that grace they have ſo deſpiſed. Yet ſuppoſe in the fourth place, that God in his infinite patience ſhould ſtill continue the offer of that grace to thee, yet thou that haſt reſiſted, it may be thirty or forty, or fifty years together, how knoweſt thou that thou ſhalt put off that habit of reſiſtance upon a ſudden, and make uſe of the grace afforded? It is ſure thou haſt many more advantages towards the doing it now, than thou wilt have then.

The diſadvantages of a death-bed repentance.

31. For firſt, the longer ſin hath kept poſſeſſion of the heart, the harder it will be to drive it out. It is true, if Repentance were nothing but a preſent ceaſing from the Acts of ſin, the death-bed were fitteſt for it, for then we are diſabled from commiting moſt ſins: but I have formerly ſhewed you, repentance contains much more than ſo, there muſt be in it a ſincere hatred of ſin, and love of God. Now how unlikely is it that he which hath all his life loved ſin, cheriſht it in his boſom, and on the contrary abhorred God and goodneſs, ſhould in an inſtant quite change his affections, hate that ſin he loved, and love God and goodneſs, which before he utterly hated?

The Cuſtom of ſin.

32. And

32. And ſecondly, the bodily pains that attend a death-bed will diſtract thee, and make thee unable to attend the work of repentance, which is a buſineſs of ſuch weight and difficulty, as will imploy all our powers even when they are at the freſheſt. *Bodily pains.*

33 Conſider thoſe diſadvantages thou muſt then ſtruggle with, and then tell me what hope there is thou ſhalt then do that, which now upon much eaſier terms thou wilt not. But in the third place there is a danger behind beyond all theſe, and that is, that the repentance which Death drives a Man to, will not be a true repentance; for in ſuch a caſe it is plain, it is only the fear of Hell puts him on it, which though it may be a good beginning, where there is time after to perfect it, yet where it goes alone it can never avail for Salvation. Now that Death-bed repentances are often only of this ſort, is too likely, when it is obſerved, that many Men who have ſeemed to repent when they have thought Death approaching, have yet after it hath pleaſed God to reſtore them to health, been as wicked (perhaps worſe) as ever they were before; which ſhews plainly that there was no real change in them, and then ſurely had ſuch a Man died in that ſeeming repentance, God, *who tries the heart*, would not have accepted it, which he ſaw was unſincere. When all theſe dangers are laid together, it will ſurely appear a moſt deſperate adventure for any Man to truſt to a Death-bed repentance. *Danger of unſincerity.*

Nor is it ever the leſs for that example of the penitent Thief, *Luke* 23. 43. which is by many ſo much depended on. For it is ſure his caſe and ours differ widely; he had never heard of Chriſt before, and ſo more could not be expected of him than to embrace him as ſoon as he was tendred to him: but we have had him offered, nay preſt upon us from our Cradles, and yet have rejected him. But if there were not this difference, it is but a faint hope can be raiſed only from a ſingle example, and another we find not in the whole Bible. The *Iſraelites* we read *were fed with Manna from Heaven*, but would you not think him ſtark mad that ſhould out of expectation of the like, neglect to provide himſelf any food? Yet it is full as reaſonable to depend upon this example as the other. I conclude all in the words of the Wiſe man. *Eccleſ.* 12. 1. *Remember thy Creator in the days of thy youth, before the evil days come.*

34. To this duty of repentance, *Faſting.* Faſting is very proper to be annexed. The Scripture uſually joyns them together: among the *Jews* the great day of atonement was to be kept with faſting, as you may ſee by comparing *Levit.* 16. 31. with *Iſa.* 58. 5. And this by God's eſpecial appointment. And in the Prophets when the People are called on to repent and humble themſelves, they are alſo called on to Faſt. Thus it is, *Joel* 2. 12. *Therefore now thus ſaith the Lord, Turn ye unto me with all your hearts, with faſting, and with weeping*, &c. Yea, ſo proper hath faſting been accounted to Humiliation, that we ſee even wicked

ed

ed *Ahab* would not omit it in his, 2 *Kings* 21. 27. nor the Heathen *Ninevites* in theirs, *Jonah* 3. 5. Nor is it leſs fit or leſs acceptable ſince Chriſt, than it was before him. For we ſee he ſuppoſes it as a duty ſometimes to be performed, when he gives directions to avoid vain-glory in it, *Mat.* 6. 6. and alſo aſſures us that if it be performed as it ought, not to pleaſe men but God, it will ſurely be rewarded by him. And accordingly we find it practiſed by the Saints. *Anna*, *Luke* 2. 37. *ſerved God with faſting and prayer:* where it is obſervable, that it is reckoned as a ſervice of God, fit to be joyned with Prayers. And the Chriſtians of the firſt times were generally very frequent in the practice of it. Now though faſting be eſpecially proper to a time of humiliation, yet is it not ſo reſtrained to it, but it may be ſeaſonable, whenſoever we have any extraordinary thing to requeſt from God. Thus when *Eſther* was to endeavour the deliverance of her people from deſtruction, ſhe and all the *Jews* kept a ſolemn Faſt, *Eſt.* 4. 16. And thus when *Paul* and *Barnabas* were to be Ordained Apoſtles, there was faſting joyned to prayer, *Acts* 13. 3. And ſo it will be very fit for us whenſoever we have need of any extraordinary directions, or aſſiſtance from God, whether concerning our temporal or ſpiritual concernments, thus to quicken our prayers by Faſting. But above all occaſions, This of Humiliation ſeems moſt to require it, for beſides the advantages of kindling our zeal, which is never more neceſſary than when we beg for pardon of ſins. Faſting carries in it ſomewhat of revenge, which is rec-

as a ſpecial part of repentance, 2 *Cor.* 7. 11. For by denying our bodies the refreſhment of our ordinary food, we do inflict ſomewhat of puniſhment upon our ſelves for our former exceſſes, or whatever other ſins we at that time accuſe our ſelves of; which is a proper effect of that indignation which every ſinner ought to have againſt himſelf. And truly he that is ſo tender of himſelf that he can never find in his heart ſo much as to miſs a meal, by way of puniſhment for his faults, ſhews he is not much fallen out with himſelf, for committing them; and ſo wants that indignation which the Apoſtle in the forenamed Texts mentions as a part of true repentance.

Faſting a revenge upon our ſelves.

35. There is no doubt, but ſuch holy revenges upon our ſelves for ſins are very acceptable to God; yet we muſt not think that either thoſe, or any thing elſe we can do, can make ſatisfaction for our offences, for that nothing but the bloud of Chriſt can do. And therefore on that, and not on any of our performances we muſt depend for pardon. Yet ſince that bloud ſhall never be applied to any but penitent ſinners, we are as much concern'd to bring forth all the fruits of repentance, as if our hopes depended on them only.

Such revenges acceptable with God;

yet no ſatisfaction for ſins.

36. How often this duty of faſting is to be performed, we have no direction in Scripture. That muſt be allotted

Times of faſting.

allotted by Mens own piety, according as their health, or other conſiderations will allow. But as it is in humiliation, the frequenter returns we have of ſet times for it, the better; ſo it is likewiſe in faſting, the oftner the better, ſo it be not hurtful either to our healths, or to ſome other duty required of us. Nay perhaps faſting may help ſome Men to more of thoſe times for humiliation, than they would otherwiſe gain. For perhaps there are ſome, who cannot, without a manifeſt hindrance to their calling, allow a whole day to that work, yet ſuch a one may at leaſt afford that time he would otherwiſe ſpend in eating: And ſo faſting will be doubly uſeful towards ſuch a mans humiliation, both by helping him in the duty, and gaining him time for it.

37. I have now gone through the firſt branch of our Duty to God, to wit, the acknowledging him for our God. The ſecond is, the having no other. Of which I need ſay little, as it is a forbidding of that groſſer ſort of Heatheniſh Idolatry, the worſhipping of Idols, which though it were once common in the world, yet it is now ſo rare, that it is not likely any that ſhall read this will be concerned in it. Only I muſt ſay, that to pay Divine worſhip to any creature, be it Saint or Angel, yea, or the Image of Chriſt himſelf, is a tranſgreſſion againſt this ſecond branch of our duty to God, it being the imparting that to a creature which is due only to God, and therefore is ſtrictly to be abſtained from. *Second branch of our duty to God.*

Inward Idolatry.

38. But there is another ſort of Idolatry, of which we are generally guilty, and that is, when we pay thoſe affections of Love, Fear, Truſt, and the like, to any creature in a higher degree than we do to God: for that is the ſetting up that thing, whatſoever it is, for our God. And this inward kind of Idolatry is that which provokes God to jealouſie, as well as the outward of worſhipping an Idol. I might enlarge much upon this, but becauſe ſome ſeverals of it have been toucht on in the former diſcourſe, I ſuppoſe it needleſs, and therefore ſhall now proceed to the ſecond head of DUTY, that to our *SELVES*.

SUNDAY VI.

Duty to our Selves; of Sobriety; of Humility; the great Sin of Pride; of Vain-Glory, the Danger, Folly; the Means to prevent it: of Meekneſs, &c.

Duty to our ſelves.

Sect. 1. THIS DUTY to our SELVES is by S. *Paul* in the forementioned Text, *Titus* 2.12. ſumm'd up in this one word Soberly, Now by *Soberly* is meant our keeping within thoſe due bounds which God hath ſet us. My buſineſs

ſineſs will therefore be to tell you what are the particulars of this ſobriety: and that firſt, in reſpect of the ſoul, ſecondly in reſpect of the body. The ſobriety of the ſoul ſtands in right governing its paſſions and affections; and to that are many Vertues required. I ſhall give you the particulars of them.

2. The firſt of them is Humility, which may well have the prime Place, not only in reſpect of the excellency of the vertue, but alſo of its uſefulneſs towards the obtaining of all the reſt: This being the foundation on which all others muſt be built. And he that hopes to gain them without this, will prove but like that fooliſh builder Chriſt ſpeaks of, *Luke* 6. 49. *Who built his houſe on the ſand.* Of the humility towards God I have already ſpoken, and ſhewed the neceſſity of it, I am now to ſpeak of Humility, as it concerns our ſelves, which will be found no leſs neceſſary than the former. *Humility.*

3. This Humility is of two ſorts, the firſt is, the having a mean and low opinion of our ſelves, the ſecond is the being content that others ſhould have ſo of us. The firſt of theſe is contrary to pride, the other to vain-glory. And that both theſe are abſolutely neceſſary to Chriſtians, I am now to ſhew you; which will, I conceive, beſt be done by laying before you firſt, the ſin; ſecondly, the danger; thirdly, the contrary vices.

4. And firſt, for Pride; the ſin of it is ſo great, that it caſt the Angels out of Heaven, and there- *The great ſin of Pride.*

more if we may judge of ſin by the puniſhment, it was not only the firſt, but the greateſt ſin that ever the Devil himſelf hath been guilty of: But we need no better proof of the hainouſneſs of it, than the extreme hatefulneſs of it to God; which beſides that inſtance of his puniſhing the Devil, we may frequently find in the Scriptures, *Prov.* 16. 5. *Every one that is proud in heart is an abomination to the Lord.* And again, Chap. 6. 16. where there is mention of ſeveral things the Lord hates, a proud look is ſet as the firſt of them: ſo *Jam.* 4. 7. *God reſiſteth the proud*; and divers other Texts there are to the ſame purpoſe, which ſhews the great hatred God bears to this ſin of Pride. Now ſince it is certain, God who is all goodneſs hates nothing, but as it is evil, it muſt needs follow, that where God hates in ſo great a degree, there muſt be a great degree of evil.

The danger. Drawing into other ſins.

5. But ſecondly, PRIDE is not only very ſinful, but very dangerous; and that firſt, in reſpect of drawing us to other ſins, ſecondly, of betraying us to puniſhments. Firſt, Pride draws us to other ſins, wherein it ſhews it ſelf indeed to be the direct contrary to humility; for as that is the root of all Vertue, ſo is this of all Vice. For he that is proud ſets himſelf up as his own God, and ſo can never ſubmit himſelf to any other Rules or Laws than what he makes to himſelf. The ungodly, ſays the Pſalmiſt, *is ſo proud that he careth not for God, Pſal.* 10.4. Where you ſee, it is his pride that makes him deſpiſe God. And when

when a Man is once come to that, he is prepared for the commiſſion of all ſins. I might inſtance in a multitude of particular ſins that naturally flow from this of pride; as firſt Anger, which the Wiſe man ſets as the effect of Pride, *Prov.* 21. 24. calling it proud wrath; ſecondly, ſtrife and contention; which he again notes to be the off-ſpring of Pride, *Prov.* 30. 10. *Only by pride cometh contention.* And both theſe are indeed moſt natural effects of pride: For he that thinks very highly of himſelf, expects much ſubmiſſion and obſervance from others, and therefore cannot but rage and quarrel whenever he thinks it not ſufficiently paid. It would be infinite to mention all the fruits of this bitter root: I ſhall name but one more, and that is that pride not only betrays us to many ſins, but alſo makes them incurable in us, for it hinders the working of all remedies.

Fruſtrating of remedies.

6. Thoſe remedies muſt either come from God or man; if from God, they muſt be either in the way of meekneſs and gentleneſs, or elſe of ſharpneſs and puniſhment. Now if God by his goodneſs eſſay to lead a proud man to repentance, he quite miſtakes God's meaning, and thinks all the mercies he receives are but the reward of his own deſert, and ſo long 'tis ſure he will never think he needs repentance. But if on the other ſide God uſe him more ſharply and lay afflictions and puniſhments upon him, thoſe in a proud heart work nothing but murmurings and hating of God, as if he did him injury in thoſe puniſhments. As for the remedies that can be

be uſed by Man, they again muſt be either by way of correction or exhortation. Corrections from Man will ſure never work more on a proud heart, than thoſe from God, for he that can think God unjuſt in them, will much rather believe it of Man. And exhortations will do as little. For let a proud Man be admoniſhed though never ſo mildly and lovingly, he looks on it as a diſgrace. And therefore inſtead of confeſſing or amending the fault, he falls to reproaching his reprover as an over-buſie or cenſorious perſon, and for that greateſt and moſt precious act of kindneſs, looks on him as his enemy. And now one that thus ſtubbornly reſiſts all means of cure, muſt be concluded in a moſt dangerous eſtate.

Betraying to puniſhment.

7. But beſides this danger of ſin. I told you there was another, that of puniſhment, and of this there will need little proof, when it is conſidered, that God is the proud man's profeſt enemy, that he hates and reſiſts him, as appeared in the Texts forecited: and then there can be little doubt, that he which hath ſo mighty an adverſary ſhall be ſure to ſmart for it. Yet beſides this general ground of concluſion, it may not be amiſs to mention ſome of thoſe Texts which particularly threaten this ſin, as *Prov.* 16.18. *Pride goeth before deſtruction, and an haughty ſpirit before a fall:* Again, *Prov.* 16. 5. *Every one that is proud in heart is an abomination to the Lord; though hand joyn in hand, yet they ſhall not be unpuniſhed.* The decree it ſeems is unalterable, and whatever endeavours are uſed to preſerve the

the proud man, they are but vain, for he *ſhall not go unpuniſhed.* And this is very remarkable in the ſtory of *Nebuchadnezzar*, *Dan.* 4. who though a King, the greateſt in the World, yet for his pride was driven from among Men to dwell and feed with Beaſts. And it is moſt frequently ſeen, that this ſin meets with very extraordinary judgments even in this life. But if it ſhould not, let not the proud Man think that he hath eſcaped God's vengeance, for it is ſure there will be a moſt ſad reckoning in the next; for if God ſpared not the Angels for this ſin, but caſt them into Hell, let no Man hope to ſpeed better.

8. In the third place I am to ſhew you the great folly of this ſin; and to do that, it will be neceſſary to conſider the ſeveral things whereof Men uſe to be proud; they are of three ſorts, either thoſe which we call the goods of Nature, or the goods of Fortune, or the goods of Grace. *The folly.*

9. By the Goods of Nature, I mean Beauty, Strength, Wit, and the like, and the being proud of any of theſe is a huge folly. For firſt, we are very apt to miſtake and think our ſelves handſom or witty when we are not, and then there cannot be a more Ridiculous Folly than to be proud of what we have not, and ſuch every one eſteems it in another man, though he never ſuppoſes it his own caſe; and ſo never diſcerns it in himſelf. And therefore there is nothing more deſpicable amongſt all men, than a proud fool; yet no Man that entertains high opinions of his own wit, but is in danger *In reſpect of the goods of Nature.*

danger to be thus deceived, a Man's own judgment of himſelf being of all others the leaſt to be truſted. But ſecondly, ſuppoſe we be not out in judging, yet what is there in any of theſe natural endowments which is worth the being proud, there being ſcarce any of them which ſome creature or other hath not in a greater degree than man? How much does the whiteneſs of the Lily, and the redneſs of the Roſe exceed the white and red of the faireſt face? What a multitude of creatures is there, that far ſurpaſs Man in ſtrength and ſwiftneſs? and divers others there are, which as far as concerns any uſeful end of theirs, act much more wiſely than moſt of us; and are therefore oftentimes in Scripture propoſed to us by way of Example. It is therefore ſurely great unreaſonableneſs for us to think highly of our ſelves for ſuch things as are common to us with beaſts and Plants. But thirdly, if they were as excellent as we fancy them, yet they are not at all durable, they are impaired and loſt by ſundry means; a phrenzy will deſtroy the rareſt wit? a ſickneſs decay the freſheſt beauty, the greateſt ſtrength, or however old age will be ſure to do all. And therefore to be proud of them is again a folly in this reſpect. But laſtly, whatever they are, we gave them not to our ſelves. No man can think he did any thing towards the procuring his natural beauty or wit, and ſo can with no reaſon value himſelf for them.

The goods of fortune.

10. In the ſecond place, the folly is as great to be proud of the goods of Fortune; by them I mean

mean wealth and honour, and the like; for it is ſure they add nothing of true worth to the man; ſomewhat of outward pomp and bravery they may help him to, but that makes no change in the perſon. You may load an Aſs with money, or deck him with rich Trappings, yet ſtill you will not make him a whit the nobler kind of beaſt by either of them. Then ſecondly, theſe are things we have no hold of, they vaniſh many times ere we are aware; he that is rich to day, may be poor to morrow, and then will be the leſs pitied by all in his poverty, the prouder he was when he was rich. Thirdly, we have them all, but as Stewards, to lay out for our Maſter's uſe, and therefore ſhould rather think how to make our accounts, than pride our ſelves in our receipts. Laſtly, whatever of theſe we have, they as well as the former, are not owing to our ſelves. But if they be lawfully gotten, we owe them only to God, whoſe bleſſing it is, that maketh rich, *Prov.* 10. 22. If unlawfully, we have them upon ſuch terms that we have very little reaſon to brag of them. And thus you ſee in theſe ſeveral reſpects, the folly of this ſecond ſort of pride.

11. The third is that of the goods of Grace; that is, any vertue a man hath. And here I cannot ſay, but the things are very valuable, they being infinitely more precious than all the world, yet nevertheleſs this is of all the reſt the higheſt folly. And that not only in the foregoing reſpect, that we help not our ſelves to it, grace being above all things moſt immediately God's

The goods of Grace.

God's work in us, but especially in this, that the being proud of grace is the sure way to lose it. God, who gives grace to the humble, will take it from the proud. For if, as we see in the parable, *Matth.* 25. 28. the talent was taken from him who had only put it to no use at all, how shall he hope to have it continued to him that hath put it to so ill, that instead of trading with it for God, hath trafficked with it for Satan? And as he will lose the grace for the future, so he will lose all the Reward of it for the time past. For let a Man have done never so many good acts, yet if he be proud of them; that pride shall be charged on him to his destruction, but the good shall never be remembred to his reward. And this proves it to be a most wretched folly to be proud of grace. It is like that of children that pull those things in pieces they are most fond of, but yet much worse than that of theirs, for we not only lose the thing (and that the most precious that can be imagined) but we must also be eternally punished for doing so, there being nothing that shall be so sadly reckoned for in the next World as the abuse of Grace: and certainly there can be no greater abuse of it than to make it serve for an end so directly contrary to that for which it was given, it being given to make us humble, not proud, to magnifie God, not our selves.

Means of Humility.

12. Having shewed you thus much of this sin, I suppose it will appear very necessary to be eschewed; to which purpose it will first be useful to consider what hath been already said

ſaid concerning it, and that ſo ſeriouſly as may work in thee not ſome ſlight diſlike, but a deep and irreconcileable hatred of the ſin: ſecondly, to be very watchful over thine own heart, that it cheriſh not any beginnings of it; never ſuffer it to feed on the fancy of thine own worth; but when ever any ſuch thought ariſes, beat it down immediately with the remembrance of ſome of thy follies or ſins, and ſo make this very motion of pride an occaſion of humility. Thirdly, never to compare thy ſelf with thoſe thou thinkeſt more fooliſh or wicked than thy ſelf, that ſo thou mayeſt like the *Phariſee*, *Luke* 16.11. extol thy ſelf for being better; but if thou wilt compare, do it with the Wiſe and Godly; and then thou wilt find thou comeſt ſo far ſhort as may help to pull down thy high eſteem of thy ſelf. Laſtly, to be very earneſt in Prayer, that God would root out all degrees of this ſin in thee, and make thee one of thoſe *poor in Spirit*, *Matth.* 5. 3. to whom the bleſſing even of Heaven it ſelf is promiſed.

13. The ſecond contrary to humility I told you was vain-glory. That is, a great thirſt after the praiſe of men. And firſt, that this is a ſin, I need prove no otherwiſe, than by the words of our Saviour, *John* 5.44. *How can ye believe, that receive honour one of another?* Where it appears, that it is not only a ſin, but ſuch an one, as hinders the receiving of Chriſt into the heart, for ſo believing there ſignifies. This then in the ſecond place ſhews you likewiſe the great dangerouſneſs of this

Vain glory.

The ſin.

this ſin, for if it be that which keeps Chriſt out of the heart, it is ſure it brings infinite danger, ſince all our ſafety, all our hope of eſcaping the wrath to come, ſtands in receiving him. But beſides the authority of this Text, common experience ſhews, that whereever this ſin hath poſſeſſion, it indangers Men to fall into any other. For he that ſo conſiders the praiſe of Men, that he muſt at no hand part with it, when ever the greateſt ſins come to be in faſhion and credit (as God knows many are now a-days) he will be ſure to commit them rather than run the diſgrace of being too ſingle and preciſe. I doubt there are many conſciences can witneſs the truth of this, ſo that I need ſay no more to prove the danger of this ſin.

The danger.

14. The third thing I am to ſhew, is the folly of it; and that will appear firſt, by conſidering what it is we thus hunt after, nothing but a little Air, a blaſt, the breath of Men, it brings us in nothing of real advantage; for I am made never the wiſer nor the better for a Man's ſaying I am wiſe and good. Beſides, if I am commended, it muſt be either before my face or behind my back: if the former, it is very often flattery, and ſo the greateſt abuſe that can be offered, and then I muſt be very much a fool to be pleaſed with it. But if it be behind my back, I have not then ſo much as the pleaſure of knowing it; and therefore it is a ſtrange folly thus to purſue what is ſo utterly gainleſs. But ſecondly, it is not only gainleſs, but painful and uneaſie alſo. He that eagerly

The folly.

eagerly ſeeks praiſe, is not at all maſter of himſelf, but muſt ſuit all his actions to that end, and inſtead of doing what his own reaſon and conſcience, (nay, perhaps his worldly conveniency) directs him to, he muſt take care to do what will bring him in commendations, and ſo enſlave himſelf to every one that hath but a tongue to commend him. Nay, there is yet a further uneaſineſs in it, and that is, when ſuch a man fails of his aim, when he miſſes the praiſe, and perhaps meets with the contrary reproach, (which is no mans lot more often then the vain-glorious, nothing making a man more deſpiſed) then what diſturbances and diſquiets, and even tortures of mind is he under? A lively inſtance of this you have in *Achitophel*, 2 *Sam.* 17.23. who had ſo much of this, upon *Abſalom*'s deſpiſing his counſel, that he choſe to rid himſelf of it, by hanging himſelf. And ſure this painfulneſs that thus attends this ſin, is ſufficient proof of the folly of it. Yet this is not all, it is yet further very hurtful. For if this vain-glory be concerning any good or Chriſtian Action, it deſtroys all the fruit of it; he that prays or gives alms to be ſeen of men, *Matth.*6. 2. muſt take that as his reward, *Verily, I ſay unto you, they have their reward*; they muſt expect none from God, but the portion of thoſe Hypocrites, that *love the praiſe of men more than the praiſe of God.* And this is a miſerable folly to make ſuch an exchange. It is like the Dog in the Fable, who ſeeing in the water the ſhadow of that meat he held in his mouth, catcht at the ſhadow, and ſo let go his meat. Such dogs, ſuch unreaſonable creatures

are

are we, when we thus let go the eternal rewards of Heaven to catch at a few good words of Men. And yet we do not only loſe thoſe eternal joys, but procure to our ſelves the contrary eternal miſeries, which is ſure the higheſt pitch of folly and madneſs. But if the vain-glory be not concerning any vertuous action, but only ſome indifferent thing, yet even there alſo it is very hurtful; for vain-glory is a ſin that whereſoever it is placed, endangers our eternal eſtate, which is the greateſt of all miſchiefs. And even for the preſent 'tis obſervable, that of all other ſins it ſtands the moſt in its own light, hinders it ſelf of that very thing it purſues. For there are very few that thus hunt after praiſe, but they are diſcerned to do ſo, and that is ſure to eclipſe what ever praiſe-worthy thing they do, and brings ſcorn upon them inſtead of reputation. And then certainly we may juſtly condemn this ſin of folly which is ſo ill a manager even of its own deſign.

Helps againſt vain-glory.

15. You have ſeen how wretched a thing this vain-glory is in theſe ſeveral reſpects, the ſerious conſideration whereof may be one good means to ſubdue it, to which it will be neceſſary to add, firſt, a great watchfulneſs over thy ſelf; obſerve narrowly whether in any Chriſtian duty thou at all conſidereſt the praiſe of Men, or even in the moſt indifferent action, look whether thou have not too eager a deſire of it, and if thou findeſt thy ſelf inclined that way, have a very ſtrict eye upon it, and where ever thou findeſt it ſtirring, check and reſiſt

reſiſt it, ſuffer it not to be the end of thy actions: But in all matters of Religion let thy Duty be the Motive; in all indifferent things of common life let Reaſon direct thee; and though thou mayeſt ſo far conſider in thoſe things the opinion of Men, as to obſerve the rules of common decency, yet never think any praiſe that comes into thee from any thing of that kind worth the contriving for. Secondly, ſet up to thy ſelf another aim, *viz.* that of pleaſing God: let that be thy enquiry when thou goeſt about any thing; whether it be approved by him. And then thou wilt not be at leiſure to conſider what praiſe it will bring thee from Men. And ſurely he that weighs of how much more moment it is to pleaſe God, who is able eternally to reward us, than man, whoſe applauſe can never do us any good, will ſurely think it reaſonable to make the former his only care. Thirdly, if at any time thou art praiſed, do not be much overjoyed with it, nor think a jot the better of thy ſelf; but if it be Vertue thou art praiſed for, remember it was God that wrought it in thee, and give him the glory, never thinking any part of it belongs to thee: If it be ſome indifferent action; then remember that it cannot deſerve praiſe, as having no goodneſs in it: But if it be a bad one, (as amongſt Men ſuch are ſometimes likelieſt to be commended) then it ought to ſet thee a trembling inſtead of rejoycing, for then that woe of our Saviour's belongs to thee, *Luke* 6. 26. *Wo unto you when men ſpeak well of you, for ſo did their Fathers to the falſe Prophets*; and there is not a greater ſign of a hard-

ned

ned heart, than when Men can make their ſins the matter of their glory. In the laſt place, let thy prayers aſſiſt in the fight with this corruption.

Meekneſs.

16. A ſecond VERTUE is MEEKNES, that is, a calmneſs and quietneſs of ſpirit, contrary to the Rages and Impatiencies of Anger. This Vertue may be exerciſed, either in reſpect of God, or his Neighbour. That towards God I have already ſpoken of, under the head of Humility, and that towards our Neighbour, I ſhall hereafter. All I have here to ſay of it is, how it becomes a duty to our ſelves; that it does, in reſpect of the great advantage we reap by it; which in meer kindneſs to our ſelves, we are to look after. And to prove that it brings us this great advantage, I need ſay no more, but that this meekneſs is that to which Chriſt hath pronounced a bleſſing, *Matth.* 5. 5. *Bleſſed are the meek*, and not only in the next world, but even in this too, *they ſhall inherit the earth.* Indeed none but the meek perſon hath the true enjoyment of any thing in the world, for the angry and impatient are like ſick people, who, we uſe to ſay, cannot enjoy the greateſt proſperities: For let things be never ſo fair without, they will raiſe ſtorms within their own breaſts. And ſurely whoever hath either in himſelf, or others obſerved the great uneaſineſs of this paſſion of anger, cannot chuſe but think meekneſs a moſt pleaſant thing.

Advantages of it.

17. Beſides, it is alſo a moſt honourable thing,

thing, for it is that whereby we reſemble Chriſt, *Learn of me*, ſaith he, *for I am meek and lowly in heart*, *Matth.* 11. 28. It is alſo that whereby we conquer our ſelves, overcome our own unruly paſſions, which of all victories is the greateſt and moſt noble. Laſtly, it is that which makes us behave our ſelves like Men, whereas anger gives us the fierceneſs and wildneſs of Savage beaſts. And accordingly the one is by all eſteemed and loved, whereas the other is hated and abhorred, every Man ſhunning a Man in rage as they would a furious beaſt.

18. Farther yet, meekneſs is the ſobriety of the mind, whereas anger is the direct madneſs; it puts a Man wholly out of his own power, and makes him do ſuch things as himſelf in his ſober temper abhors; how many Men have done thoſe things in their rage, which they have repented all their lives after? And therefore ſurely as much as a Man is more honourable than a beaſt, a ſober Man than a Mad-man; ſo much hath this vertue of Meekneſs the advantage of honour above the contrary vice of Anger.

19. Again, meekneſs makes any condition tolerable and eaſie to be endured. He that meekly bears any ſuffering, takes off the edge of it that it cannot wound him; whereas he that frets and rages at it, whets it and makes it much ſharper than it would be; nay, in ſome caſes makes that ſo, which would not elſe be ſo at all. As particularly in the caſe of reproachful words, which in themſelves can do us no harm, they neither hurt our bodies, nor leſſen our eſtates, the only miſchief they can do us is to make us

angry

angry, and then our anger may do us many more; whereas he that meekly paſſes them by, is never the worſe for them, nay the better; for he ſhall be rewarded by God for that patience. Much more might be ſaid to recommend this vertue to us, in reſpect of our own preſent advantage, but I ſuppoſe this may ſuffice to perſwade Men to eſteem of it. The harder matter will be to gain them to the practice of it, wherein Men pretend I know not what difficulties of natural conſtitutions, and the like; yet ſure there is no Man of ſo Cholerick a temper, but if he did heartily ſet about it, would find it were not impoſſible in ſome good meaſure to ſubdue it: but then he muſt be diligent in uſing means to that end. Divers of theſe means there are, I ſhall mention ſome few.

Means of obtaining it.

20. As firſt, The imprinting deep in our minds the lovelineſs and benefits of meekneſs, together with the uglineſs and miſchiefs of anger. Secondly, to ſet before us the example of Chriſt, who endured all reproaches, yea, torments with perfect patience, that was *led as a ſheep to the ſlaughter*, Iſaiah 53. 7. *That when he was reviled, reviled not again, when he ſuffered, threatned not*; 1 *Pet.* 2. 23. And if he the Lord of glory, ſuffered thus meekly and unjuſtly from his own creatures, with what face can we ever complain of any injury done to us? Thirdly, To be very watchful to prevent the very firſt beginnings of anger, and to that purpoſe to mortifie all inward peeviſhneſs and frowardneſs of mind, which is a ſin in it ſelf, though it proceed

proceed no further, but will alſo be ſure, if it be cheriſhed, to break out into open effects of anger. Therefore whenever thou findeſt the leaſt riſing of it within thee, make as much haſte to check it as thou wouldeſt to quench a fire in thy houſe; but be ſure thou bring no fuel to it, by entertaining any thoughts that may increaſe it. And at ſuch time eſpecially keep a moſt ſtrict watch over thy tongue, that it break not out into any angry ſpeeches, for that breath will fan the fire, not only in thine adverſary, but thy ſelf too; therefore though thy heart be hot within, ſtifle the flame, and let it not break out; and the greater the temptation is, the more earneſtly lift up thy heart to God to aſſiſt thee to overcome it. Fourthly, often remember how great puniſhments thy ſins have deſerved, and then, whether thy ſufferings be from God or man, thou wilt acknowledge them to be far ſhort of what is due to thee, and therefore wilt be aſhamed to be impatient at them.

21. The third Vertue is CONSIDERATION, and this in a moſt ſpecial manner we owe to our Souls. For without it we ſhall, as raſh unadviſed people uſe to do, ruſh them into infinite perils. Now this Conſideration is either of our State, or of our Actions. By our State, I mean what our condition is to God-ward, whether it be ſuch that we may reaſonably conclude our ſelves in his favour. This it much concerns us to conſider and examine, and that not by thoſe eaſie rules Men are apt to frame to themſelves,

Conſideration.

Of our State.

as whether they believe that Christ died for their sins; that they are of the number of the elect, and shall certainly be saved: if these and the like were all that were required to put us into God's favour, none but some melancholy person could ever be out of it; for we are apt enough generally to believe comfortably of our selves. But the Rules God hath given us in his Word are those by which we must be tried at the last day, and therefore are certainly the only safe ones by which to try our selves now. And the summ of those are, that whosoever continues in any one wilful sin, is not in his favour, nor can, if he do so die, hope for any mercy at his hand.

The Rule by which to try our State.

22. Now it is highly necessary we should consider what our condition is in this respect: for since our life is nothing but a puff of breath in our nostrils, which may, for ought we know, be taken from us the next minute, it nearly concerns us to know how we are provided for another World, that so in case we want at present that Oyl in our Lamps wherewith we are to meet the Bridegroom, *Matth.* 25. 8. we may timely get it, and not for want of it be ever shut out like the foolish Virgins from his presence. The neglect of this consideration hath undone many souls, some by too easie a belief that they were in a good condition, without considering and trying themselves by the foregoing Rule, but presuming either upon some slight outward performances, or upon such a false

The danger of inconsideration.

falſe faith as I even now deſcribed; others by the wretched careleſs going on, without ſo much as asking themſelves what their condition is, but hope they ſhould do as well as their neighbours, and ſo never enquiring farther; which wretched careleſneſs will as certainly undo the ſpiritual, as the like would do the temporal eſtate; yet in that every Man is wiſe enough to foreſee, that a Man that never takes any accounts of his eſtate to ſee whether he be worth ſomething or nothing, will be ſure to be a beggar in the end. But in this far weightier matter we can generally be thus improvident.

23. The ſecond thing we are to conſider, is our Actions, and thoſe either before or after the doing of them. In the firſt place, we are to conſider before we act, and not to do any thing raſhly or headily; but firſt, to adviſe with our conſciences, whether this be lawful to be done, for he that follows his own inclination, and does every thing which that moves him to, ſhall be ſure to fall into a multitude of ſins. Therefore conſider ſoberly, and be aſſured of the lawfulneſs of the thing before thou venture to do it. This adviſedneſs is in all worldly things accounted ſo neceſſary a part of wiſdom, that no Man is accounted wiſe without it; a raſh Man we look upon as the next degree to a fool. And yet it is ſure, there is not ſo much need of looking about us in any thing as in what concerns our ſouls, and that not only in reſpect of the great value of them above all things elſe, but alſo in regard of

Our actions.

Before we do them.

the great danger they are in, as hath been ſhewed more at large in the beginning of the Treatiſe.

After they are done.

24. Secondly, We are to conſider the actions when they are paſt alſo, that is, we are to examine whether they have been ſuch as are allowable by the Laws of Chriſt. This is very neceſſary, whether they be good or bad; if they be good, the recalling them helpeth us to the comfort of a good conſcience, and that comfort again encourageth us to go on in the like; and beſides, it ſtirs us up to thankfulneſs to God, by whoſe grace alone we were enabled to do them. But if they be bad, then it is eſpecially neceſſary that we thus examine them, for without this it is impoſſible we ſhould ever come to amendment; for unleſs we obſerve them to have been amiſs, we can never think it needful to amend, but ſhall ſtill run on from one wickedneſs to another, which is the greateſt curſe any Man can lye under.

Frequency of conſideration.

25. The oftner therefore we uſe this Conſideration, the better, for the leſs likely it is that any of our ſins ſhall eſcape our knowledge. It is much to be wiſht that every Man would thus every night try the actions of the day, that ſo, if he have done any thing amiſs, he may ſoon check himſelf for it, and ſettle his reſolutions againſt it, and not let it grow on to a habit and courſe. And that he may alſo early beg God's pardon, which will the eaſier be had, the ſooner it is asked, every delay of that being a great increaſe of the ſin. And ſurely whoever

means

means to take an account of himself at all, will find this the easier course; it being much easier to do it so a little at a time, and while passages are fresh in his memory, than to take the account of a long time together. Now if it be considered, that every wilful sin must have a particular repentance before it can be pardoned, methinks Men should tremble to sleep without that repentance; for what assurance hath any Man that lies down in his Bed, that he shall ever rise again? And then how dangerous is the condition of that Man that sleeps in an unrepented sin? The weighing of these several Motives may be a means, by God's blessing, to bring us to the practice of this duty of Consideration in all the parts of it.

Danger of omitting it.

Mary Sharp

SUNDAY VII.

Of Contentedneſs and the contraries to it; Murmuring, Ambition, Covetouſneſs, Envy; Helps to Contentedneſs; of duties which concern our Bodies; of Chaſtity, &c. *Helps to it; Of Temperance.*

Sect. 1. *Contentedneſs.* THE Fourth VERTUE is CONTENTEDNES, and this ſurely is a duty we muſt owe to our ſelves, it being that without which it is impoſſible to be happy. This Contentedneſs is a well-pleaſedneſs with that condition whatever it is, that God hath placed us in, not murmuring and repining at our lot, but chearfully welcoming whatſoever God ſends. How great, and withal how pleaſant a vertue this is, may appear by the contrariety it hath to ſeveral great and painful vices; ſo that where this is rooted in the heart, it ſubdues not only ſome ſuch ſingle ſin, but a cluſter of them together.

Contrary to murmuring. 2. And firſt it is contrary to all murmuring in general, which is a ſin moſt hateful to God, as may appear by his ſharp puniſhments of it

it on the *Iſraelites* in the Wilderneſs, as you may read in ſeveral places of the Book of *Exodus*, and *Numbers*. And ſurely it is alſo very painful and uneaſie to a Man's ſelf; for if, as the Pſalmiſt ſaith, it be a *joyful and pleaſant thing to be thankful*, we may by the Rule of contraries conclude, it is a ſad and unpleaſant thing to be murmuring, and, I doubt not, every Man's own experience will confirm the truth of it.

3. Secondly, It is contrary to Ambition: the Ambitious Man is always diſliking his preſent condition, and that makes him ſo greedily to ſeek a higher, whereas he that is content with his own, lies quite out of the road of this temptation. Now Ambition is not only a great ſin in it ſelf, but it puts Men upon many other: There is nothing ſo horrid, which a Man that eagerly ſeeks greatneſs will ſtick at; lying, perjury, murder, or any thing will down with him, if they ſeem to tend to his advancement; And the uneaſineſs of it is anſwerable to the ſin. This none can doubt of, that conſiders what a multitude of fears and jealouſies, cares and diſtractions there are that attend ambition in its progreſs, beſides the great and publick ruines that uſually befal it in the end. And therefore ſure Contentedneſs is in this reſpect as well a Happineſs as a Vertue. *To ambition.*

4. Thirdly, It is contrary to Covetouſneſs; this the Apoſtle witneſſeth, *Heb.* 13. 5. *Let your converſation be without covetouſneſs, and be content with ſuch things as ye have*; where you ſee contentedneſs is ſet as the direct contrary to covetouſneſs, *To Covetouſneſs.*

vetouſneſs. But of this there needs no other proof than common experience: for we ſee the covetous Man never thinks he hath enough, and therefore can never be content: for no Man can be ſaid to be ſo that thirſts after any thing he hath not. Now that you may ſee how excellent and neceſſary a vertue this is that ſecures us againſt covetouſneſs, it will not be amiſs a little to conſider the nature of that ſin.

Covetouſneſs contrary to our duty to God.

5. That it is a very great crime, is moſt certain, for it is contrary to the very foundation of all good life; I mean thoſe three great Duties, to God, to our Selves, to our Neighbours. Firſt, It is ſo contrary to our Duty to God, that Chriſt himſelf tells us, *Luke* 16. 13. *We cannot ſerve God and Mammon:* he that ſets his heart upon Wealth, muſt neceſſarily take it off from God. And this we daily ſee in the covetous Man's practice, he is ſo eager in the gaining of riches, that he hath no time or care to perform duty to God; let but a good bargain, or opportunity of gain come in his way, Prayer and all duties of Religion muſt be neglected to attend it. Nay, when the committing the greateſt ſin againſt God may be likely either to get or ſave him ought, his love of wealth quickly perſwades him to commit it.

To our Selves.

6. Secondly, It is contrary to the Duty we owe our Selves, and that both in reſpect of our Souls and Bodies. The covetous Man deſpiſes his Soul, ſells that to eternal deſtruction for a little pelf:

pelf: for ſo every Man does that by any unlawful means ſeeks to enrich himſelf; nay, though he do it not by unlawful means, yet if he have once ſet his heart upon wealth, he is that covetous perſon upon whom the Apoſtle hath pronounced, *That he ſhall not enter into the Kingdom of God*, 1 *Cor.* 6. 10. Nor doth he only offend againſt his Soul, but his Body too. For he often denies that thoſe neceſſary refreſhments it wants, and for which his wealth (as far as it concerns himſelf) was given him. This is ſo conſtantly the cuſtom of rich Miſers, that I need not prove it to you.

7. In the third place, Covetouſneſs is contrary to the duty we owe to our Neighbours. And that in both the parts of it, Juſtice and Charity: he that loves money immoderately, will not care whom he cheats and defrauds, ſo he may bring in gain to himſelf: and from hence ſpring thoſe many tricks of deceit and couzenage ſo common in the World. As for Charity, that is never to be hoped for from a covetous Man, who dreads the leſſening of his own heaps more than the ſtarving of his poor brother. You ſee how great a ſin this is, that we may well ſay of it as the Apoſtle doth. 1 *Tim.* 6. 10. *The love of money is the root of all evil.* And it is not much leſs uneaſie than wicked, for between the care of getting and the fear of loſing, the covetous Man enjoys no quiet hour. Therefore every Man is deeply concerned, as he tenders his happineſs either in this World or the next, to guard himſelf againſt this ſin, which he

To our Neighbours.

can no way do, but by poſſeſſing his heart with this vertue of contentedneſs.

Contentedneſs contrary to envy.

8. In the fourth place, it is contrary to envy, for he that is content with his own condition hath no temptation to envy anothers: How unchriſtian a ſin this of envy is, ſhall hereafter be ſhewed; At the preſent, I need ſay no more, but that it is alſo a very uneaſie one, it frets and gnaws the very heart of him that harbours it. But the worſe this ſin is, the more excellent ſtill is this grace of contentedneſs, which frees us from it. I ſuppoſe I have ſaid enough to make you think this a very lovely and deſirable Vertue. And ſure it were not impoſſible to be gained by any, that would but obſerve theſe few directions.

Helps to contentedneſs.

9. Firſt, To conſider that whatever our eſtate and condition in any reſpect be, it is that which is allotted us by God, and therefore is certainly the beſt for us, he being much better able to judge for us than we for our ſelves; and therefore to be diſpleaſed at it, is in effect to ſay, we are wiſer than he. Secondly, conſider throughly the vanity of all worldly things, how very little there is in them, while we have them; and how uncertain we are to keep them; but above all, in how little ſtead they will ſtand us at the day of Death or Judgment, and then thou canſt not think any of them much worth the deſiring, and ſo wilt not be diſcontented for want of them. Thirdly, Syffer not thy fancy to run on things thou haſt not; many.

many have put themſelves out of love with what they have, only by thinking what they want. He that ſees his Neighbour poſſeſs ſomewhat which himſelf hath not, is apt to think how happy he ſhould be, if he were in that Man's condition, and in the mean time never thinks of enjoying his own, which yet perhaps in many reſpects may be much happier, than that of his neighbour's which he ſo much admires. For we look but upon the outſide of other Men's conditions, and many a Man that is envied by his neighbours, as a wonderful happy perſon, hath yet ſome ſecret trouble, which makes him think much otherwiſe of himſelf. Therefore never compare thy condition in any thing with thoſe thou counteſt more proſperous than thy ſelf, but rather do it with thoſe thou knoweſt more unhappy, and then thou wilt find cauſe to rejoyce in thine own portion. Fourthly, conſider how far thou art from deſerving any good thing from God, and then thou canſt not but with *Jacob*, *Gen.* 32. 10. confeſs that thou art *not worthy of the leaſt of thoſe mercies* thou enjoyeſt, and inſtead of murmuring that they are no more, wilt ſee reaſon to admire, and praiſe the bounty of God, that they are ſo many. Fifthly, be often thinking of the joys laid up for thee in Heaven: look upon that as thy home, on this World only as an Inn, where thou art fain to take up in thy paſſage; and then as a Traveller expects not the ſame conveniences at an Inn, that he hath at home; ſo thou haſt reaſon to be content with whatever entertainment thou findeſt here, knowing thou art upon thy journey to a place

of

infinite happineſs, which will make an abundant amends for all the uneaſineſs, and hardſhip thou canſt ſuffer in the way. Laſtly, Pray to God, from whom all good things do come, that he will to all his other bleſſings, add this of a contented mind, without which thou canſt have no taſte or reliſh of any other.

Diligence.

10. A fifth Duty is DILIGENCE: this is made up of two parts, watchfulneſs, and induſtry, and both theſe we owe to our Souls.

Watchfulneſs againſt ſin.

11. Firſt, Watchfulneſs, in obſerving all the dangers that threaten them. Now ſince nothing can endanger our Souls, but ſin, this watchfulneſs is principally to be imployed againſt that: And as in a Beſieged City where there is any weak part, there it is neceſſary to keep the ſtrongeſt guard; ſo it is here, where ever thou findeſt thy inclinations ſuch, as are moſt likely to betray thee to ſin, there it concerns thee to be eſpecially watchful: Obſerve therefore carefully to what ſins either thy natural temper, thy company, or thy courſe of life do particularly incline thee, and watch thy ſelf very narrowly in thoſe; yet do not ſo lay out all thy care on thoſe, as to leave thy ſelf open to any other, for that may give Satan as much advantage on the other ſide; but let thy watch be general againſt all ſin, though in a ſpecial manner againſt thoſe, which are like oftneſt to aſſault thee.

12. The

12. The ſecond part of diligence, is induſtry or labour, and this alſo we owe to our Souls, for without it they will as little proſper as the Vineyard of the ſluggard; which *Solomon* deſcribes, *Prov.* 24. 30. For there is a husbandry of the Soul, as well as of the eſtate, and the end of the one, as of the other is the increaſing and improving of its riches. Now the riches of the Soul are either Natural or Divine. By the Natural I mean its faculties or reaſon, wit, memory, and the like; by the Divine I mean the graces of God, which are not the Souls Natural portion, but are given immediately by God; and both theſe we are to take care to improve, they being both talents intruſted to us for that purpoſe. *Induſtry in improving gifts.*

13. The way of improving the Natural, is by imploying them ſo, as may bring in moſt honour to God: we muſt not let them lie idle by us through ſloth, neither muſt we overwhelm them with intemperance and brutiſh pleaſures, which is the caſe of too many, but we muſt employ them, and ſet them on work. But then we muſt be ſure it be not in the Devil's ſervice; like many, who ſet their wit only to the profaning of God, or cheating their neighbours, and ſtuff their memories with ſuch filthineſs, as ſhould never once enter their thoughts; our uſe of them muſt be ſuch, as may bring in moſt glory to God, moſt benefit to our neighbours, and may beſt fit us to make our accounts, when God ſhall come to reckon with us for them. *Of Nature.*

14. But

Of Grace.

14. But the other part of the Souls riches, is yet more precious, that is, Grace, and of this we muſt be eſpecially careful, to husband and improve it. This is a duty expreſly commanded us by the Apoſtle, 2 *Pet.* 3. 18. *Grow in Grace.* And again in the firſt Chapter of that Epiſtle, Verſe 5. *Give all diligence to add to your Faith vertue, and to vertue knowledge*, &c. Now the eſpecial means of improving grace is by imploying it, that is, by doing thoſe things for the enabling of us, whereunto it was given us. This is a ſure means, not only in reſpect of that eaſineſs, which a cuſtom of any thing brings in the doing of it, but principally, as it hath the promiſe of God, who hath promiſed, *Matth.* 25. 29. That *to him that hath* (that is, hath made uſe of what he hath) *ſhall be given, and he ſhall have abundance.* He that diligently and faithfully imploys the firſt beginnings of Grace, ſhall yet have more, and he that in like manner husbands that more, ſhall yet have a greater degree; ſo that what *Solomon* ſaith of temporal riches, is alſo true of ſpiritual, *The hand of the diligent maketh rich.*

To improve good motions.

15. Therefore when ever thou findeſt any good motions in thy heart, remember that is a ſeaſon for this ſpiritual husbandry: If thou haſt but a check of conſcience againſt any ſin thou liveſt in, drive that on till it come to a hatred; and then that hatred, till it come to reſolution; then from that reſolution, proceed to ſome endeavours againſt it.

Do.

Do this faithfully, and ſincerely, and thou ſhalt certainly find the grace of God aſſiſting thee, not only in every of theſe ſteps, but alſo enabling thee to advance ſtill higher, till thou come to ſome Victory over it. Yet to this induſtry thou muſt not fail to add thy prayers alſo, there being a promiſe that God will *give the holy ſpirit to them that ask it*, *Matth.* 7. 11. And therefore they that ask it not, have no reaſon to expect it. But it muſt be asked with ſuch an earneſtneſs, as is ſome way anſwerable to the value of the thing, which being infinitely more precious than all the World, both in reſpect of its own worth, and its uſefulneſs to us, we muſt beg it with much more zeal and earneſtneſs, than all temporal bleſſings, or elſe we ſhew our ſelves deſpiſers of it.

The danger of the contrary.

16. Having directed you to the means of improving grace, I ſhall to quicken you to it, mention the great danger of the contrary; and that is not as in other things, the loſing only thoſe further degrees, which our induſtry might have helped us to, but it is the loſing even of what we already have; *For from him that hath not* (that is again, hath not made uſe of what he hath) *ſhall be taken away even that which he hath*, *Matth.* 25. 29. God will withdraw the grace, which he ſees ſo neglected, as we ſee in that Parable; the Talent was taken from him that had only hid it in a Napkin, and had brought in no gain to his Lord. And this is a moſt ſad puniſhment, the greateſt that can befal any Man, before he comes to Hell, indeed it is

ſome

ſome kind of foretaſte of it, it is the delivering him up to the power of the Devil, and it is the baniſhing him from the face of God, which are not the leaſt parts of the miſery of the damned. And it is alſo the binding a Man over to that fuller portion of wretchedneſs in another World, for that is the laſt doom of the unprofitable ſervant, *Matth.*25:30. *Caſt ye the unprofitable ſervant into outer darkneſs, there ſhall be weeping and gnaſhing of teeth.* You ſee there are no light dangers that attend this neglect of grace, and therefore if we have any love, nay, any common pity to our Souls, we muſt ſet our ſelves to this induſtry. I have now done with thoſe VERTUES which reſpect our SOULS, I come now to thoſe which concern our BODIES

Chaſtity. 17. The firſt of which is CHASTITY or PURITY, which may well be ſet in the front of the duties we owe to our bodies, ſince the Apoſtle, 1 *Cor.* 6. 18. ſets the contrary as the eſpecial ſin againſt them. *He that committeth fornication, ſinneth againſt his own* body.

18. Now this vertue of Chaſtity conſiſts in a perfect abſtaining from all kinds of uncleanneſs, not only that of adultery, and fornication, but all other more unnatural ſorts of it committed either upon our ſelves, or with any other. In a word, all acts of that kind are utterly againſt Chaſtity, ſave only in lawful marriage. And even there Men are not to think themſelves let looſe to pleaſe their brutiſh appetites, but are to keep themſelves within ſuch rules of moderation, as agree to the ends of marriage, which being

being theſe two, the begetting of Children, and the avoiding of fornication, nothing muſt be done which may hinder the firſt of theſe ends; and the ſecond aiming only at the ſubduing of luſt, the keeping Men from any ſinful effects of it, is very contrary to that end to make marriage an occaſion of heightning and enflaming it.

19. But this vertue of Chaſtity reacheth not only to the reſtraining of the groſſer act, but to all lower degrees; it ſets a guard upon our eyes, according to that of our Saviour, *Matth.* 5. 28. *He that looketh on a woman to luſt after her, hath committed adultery with her already in his heart*; and upon our hand, as appears by what Chriſt adds in that place, *If thy hand offend thee, cut it off*; ſo alſo upon our tongues, that they ſpeak no immodeſt or filthy words, *Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth*, *Epheſ.* 4. 29. Nay upon our very thoughts and fancies, we muſt not entertain any foul or filthy deſires, not ſo much as the imagination of any ſuch thing. Therefore he that forbears the groſſer act, and yet allows himſelf in any of theſe, it is to be ſuſpected that it is rather ſome outward reſtraint that keeps him from it, than the conſcience of the ſin. For if it were that, it would keep him from theſe too, theſe being ſins alſo, and very great ones in God's ſight. Beſides, he that lets himſelf looſe to theſe, puts himſelf in very great danger of the other, it being much more eaſie to abſtain from all, than to ſecure againſt the one, when the other

Uncleanneſs forbidden in the very loweſt degrees.

other is allowed. But above all, it is to be considered that even these lower degrees are such as make Men very odious in God's eyes, who seeth the heart, and loves none that are not pure there.

The mischiefs of it.

20. The loveliness of this Vertue of Chastity needs no other way of describing, than by considering the loathsomness and mischiefs of the contrary sin, which is first, very brutish; those desires are but the same that the beasts have, and then how far are they sunk below the nature of Men, that can boast of their sins of that kind, as of their special excellency? When, if that be the measure, a Goat is the more excellent creature. But indeed they that eagerly pursue this part of Bestiality, do often leave themselves little, besides their humane shape, to difference them from beasts: This sin so clouds the understanding, and defaceth the reasonable Soul. Therefore *Solomon* very well describes the young Man that was going to the Harlots house, *Prov.* 7. 22. *He goeth after her as an Ox goeth to the slaughter.*

To the Soul.

To the Body.

21. Nor secondly are the effects of it better to the body than to the mind. The many foul and filthy, besides painful diseases, which often follow this sin, are sufficient witnesses how mischievous it is to the body. And alas, how many are there that have thus made themselves the Devil's Martyrs? suffered such torments in the pursuit of this sin, as would exceed the invention of the greatest

greateſt tyrant? Surely they that pay thus dear for damnation, very well deſerve to enjoy the purchace.

22. But thirdly, Beſides the natural fruits of this ſin, it is attended with very great and heavy Judgments from God; the moſt extraordinary and miraculous Judgment that ever befel any place. Fire and Brimſtone from Heaven upon *Sodom* and *Gomorrha*, was for this ſin of uncleanneſs: And many examples likewiſe of God's vengeance may be obſerved on particular perſons, for this ſin. The inceſt of *Amnon* coſt him his life, as you may read, 2 *Sam.* 13. *Zimri* and *Cozbi* were ſlain in the very act, *Numb.* 25. 8. And no perſon that commits the like, hath any aſſurance it ſhall not be his own caſe. For how ſecretly ſoever it be committed, it cannot be hid from God, who is the ſure avenger of all ſuch wickedneſs. Nay, God hath very particularly threatned this ſin, 1 *Cor.* 3. 17. *If any man defile the Temple of God, him ſhall God deſtroy.* This ſin of uncleanneſs is a kind of ſacrilege, a polluting thoſe bodies, which God hath choſen for his Temples, and therefore no wonder, if it be thus heavily puniſhed.

The judgments of God againſt it.

23. Laſtly, This ſin ſhuts us out from the Kingdom of Heaven, wherein no impure thing can enter. And we never find any liſt of thoſe ſins, which bar Men thence, but this of uncleanneſs hath a ſpecial place in it: Thus it is, *Gal.* 5. 19. and ſo again, 1 *Cor.* 6. 9.

It ſhuts out from Heaven.

If

If we will thus pollute our ſelves, we are fit company only for thoſe black ſpirits, the Devil and his Angels, and therefore with them we muſt expect our portion, where our flames of luſt ſhall end in flames of fire.

Helps to Chaſtity.

24. All this laid together, may ſurely recommend the vertue of Chaſtity to us, for the preſerving of which we muſt be very careful, firſt, to check the beginnings of the temptation to caſt away the very firſt fancy of luſt with indignation; for if you once fall to parley and talk with it, it gains ſtill more upon you, and then it will be harder to reſiſt; Therefore your way in this temptation is to fly rather than fight with it. This is very neceſſary, not only that we may avoid the danger of proceeding to act the ſin, but alſo in reſpect of the preſent fault of entertaining ſuch fancies, which of it ſelf, though it ſhould never proceed further is, as hath been ſhewed, a great abomination before God. Secondly, have a ſpecial care to fly idleneſs, which is the proper ſoil for theſe filthy weeds to grow in, and keep thy ſelf always buſied in ſome innocent or vertuous imployment; for then theſe fancies will be leſs apt to offer themſelves. Thirdly, never ſuffer thy ſelf to recal any unclean paſſages of thy former life with delight, for that is to act over the ſin again, and will be ſo reckoned by God, nay, perhaps thus deliberately to think of it may be a greater guilt than a raſh acting of it. For this both ſhews thy heart to be ſet upon filthineſs, and is alſo a preparation to more acts of it. Fourthly, for-

forbear the company of ſuch light and wanton perſons, as either by the filthineſs of their diſcourſe, or any other means, may be a ſnare to thee. Fifthly, pray earneſtly, that God would give thee the Spirit of Purity, eſpecially at the time of any preſent temptation. Bring the unclean Devil to Chriſt to be caſt out, as did the Man in the Goſpel; and if it will not be caſt out with Prayer alone, add Faſting to it; but be ſure thou do not keep up the flame by any high or immoderate feeding. The laſt remedy, when the former prove vain, is Marriage, which becomes a duty to him that cannot live innocently without it. But even here there muſt be care taken, leſt this which ſhould be for his good, become not to him an occaſion of falling for want of ſobriety in the uſe of Marriage. But this I have toucht on already, and therefore need add no more but an earneſt intreaty, that Men would conſider ſeriouſly of the foulneſs and danger of this ſin of uncleanneſs, and not let the commonneſs of it leſſen their hatred of it, but rather make them abhor that ſhameleſs impudence of the World, that can make light of this ſin againſt which God hath pronounced ſuch heavy curſes, *Whoremongers and Adulterers God will judge*, *Heb.* 13. 4. And ſo he will certainly do all ſorts of unclean perſons whatſoever.

25. The ſecond VERTUE that concerns our bodies is TEMPERANCE: And the exerciſes of that are divers, as firſt, Temperance in Eating; ſecondly, in Drinking; thirdly, in Sleep; fourthly, in Recreation; fifthly, in Apparel. I ſhall ſpeak: *Temperance.*

ſpeak of them ſeverally; and firſt, of temperance in Eating. This temperance is obſerved when our eating is agreeable to thoſe ends to which eating is by God and Nature deſigned; thoſe are firſt, the Being; ſecondly, the Well-being of our bodies.

In Eating.

Ends of eating.

26. Man is of ſuch a frame that Eating becomes neceſſary to him for the preſerving his life; hunger being a natural diſeaſe which will prove deadly if not prevented, and the only phyſick for it is eating, which is therefore become a neceſſary means of keeping us alive. And that is the firſt end of eating, and as Men uſe not to take Phyſick for pleaſure, but remedy, ſo neither ſhould they eat.

Preſerving of life.

27. But ſecondly, God hath been ſo bountiful as to provide not only for the Being, but the Well-being of our bodies, and therefore we are not tied to ſuch ſtrictneſs, that we may eat no more than will juſt keep us from ſtarving, but we may alſo eat whatſoever either for kind or quantity moſt tends to the health and welfare of them: Now that eating which is agreeable to theſe ends, is within the bounds of temperance, as on the contrary whatſoever is contrary to them, is a tranſgreſſion againſt it; he therefore that ſets up to himſelf other ends of eating, as either the pleaſing of his taſte, or (what is yet worſe) the pampering of his body, that he may the better ſerve his luſt, he directly thwarts and croſſes theſe ends of God; for he that hath

Of Health.

thoſe

thoſe aims doth that which is very contrary to health, yea, to life it ſelf, as appears by the many diſeaſes and untimely deaths which ſurfeiting and uncleanneſs daily bring on Men.

28. He therefore that will practiſe this Vertue of Temperance, muſt neither eat ſo much, nor of any ſuch ſorts of meat, (provided he can have other) as may be hurtful to his health: what the ſorts or quantities ſhall be, is impoſſible to ſet down, for that differs according to the ſeveral conſtitutions of Men, ſome Men may with temperance eat a great deal, becauſe their ſtomachs require it; when another may be guilty of intemperance in eating but half ſo much, becauſe it is more than is uſeful to him. And ſo alſo for the ſort of Meat, it may be niceneſs and luxury for ſome to be curious in them, when yet ſome degree of it may be neceſſary to the infirmities of a weak ſtomach, which not out of wantonneſs but diſeaſe cannot eat the courſer meats. But I think it may in general be ſaid, that to healthful bodies the plaineſt meats are generally the moſt wholſom, but every Man muſt in this be left to judge for himſelf; and that he may do it aright, he muſt be careful that he never ſuffer himſelf to be enſlaved to his palate, for that will be ſure to ſatisfie itſelf, whatever becomes of health or life. *Rules of Temperance in Eating.*

29. To ſecure him the better, let him conſider. First, how unreaſonable a thing it is that the whole body ſhould be ſubject to this one Senſe of Taſting *Means of it.*

ing

ing that it must run all hazards only to please that. But it is yet much more so, that the divine part, the Soul, should also be thus enslaved; and yet thus it is in an intemperate person, his very soul must be sacrificed to this brutish appetite for the sin of intemperance, though it be acted by the Body, yet the Soul must share in the eternal punishment of it. Secondly, Consider how extream short and vanishing this pleasure is, it is gone in a moment, but the pains that attend the excess of it are much more durable, and then surely it agrees not with that common reason, wherewith, as Men, we are indued, to set our hearts upon it. But then in the third place, it agrees yet worse with the temper of a Christian, who should have his heart so purified and refined with the expectation of those higher & spiritual joys he looks for in another World, that he should very much despise these gross and brutish pleasures, which beasts are as capable of as we, and to them we may well be contented to leave them, it being the highest their natures can reach to; but for us who have so much more excellent hopes, it is an intolerable shame that we should account them as any part of our happiness. Lastly, the sin of Gluttony is so great and dangerous, that Christ thought fit to give an especial warning against it. *Take heed to your selves that your hearts be not overcharged with surfeiting*, &c. *Luk.* 21.34. And you know what was the end of the rich glutton, *Luk.* 16. He that had *fared deliciously every day*, at last wants a *drop of water to cool his tongue*. So much for the first sort of Temperance, that of Eating.

SUN-

SUNDAY VIII.

Of Temperance in drinking, Falſe Ends of drinking, viz. *Good-fellowſhip, putting away cares,* &c.

Sect. 1. THE ſecond is Temperance in Drinking; and the ends of eating and drinking being much the ſame, I can give no other direct rules in this, than what were given in the former, to wit, that we drink neither of ſuch ſorts of liquor, nor in ſuch quantities as may not agree with the right ends of drinking, the preſerving our lives and healths: only in this there will be need of puting in one Caution; for our underſtandings being in more danger to be hurt by drinking than meat, we muſt rather take care to keep that ſafe, and rather not drink what we might ſafely in reſpect of our health, if it be in danger to diſtemper our reaſon. This I ſay, becauſe it is poſſible ſome Mens brains may be ſo weak that their heads cannot bear that ordinary quantity of drink which would do their bodies no harm. And whoever is of this temper muſt ſtrictly abſtain from that degree of drink, or that ſort of it which he finds hath that effect, yea, though it

Temperance in drinking.

do in other reſpects appear not only ſafe but uſeful to his health. For though we are to preſerve our healths, yet we are not to do it by a ſin, as drunkenneſs moſt certainly is.

False ends of drinking.

2. But alas! of thoſe multitudes of drunkards we have in the World, this is the caſe but of very few, moſt of them going far beyond what their health requires, yea, or can bear, even to the utter deſtruction thereof. And therefore it is plain, Men have ſet up to themſelves ſome other ends of drinking than thoſe allowable ones forementioned: it may not be amiſs a little to explain what they are, and withal to ſhew the unreaſonableneſs of them.

Good fellowſhip.

3. The firſt, and moſt owned, is that which they call good fellowſhip; one Man drinks to keep another company at it. But I would ask ſuch a one, whether if that Man were drinking rank poiſon, he would pledge him for company? If he ſay he would not, I muſt tell him, that by the very ſame, nay, far greater reaſon, he is not to do this. For immoderate drinking is that very poiſon; perhaps it doth not always work death immediate (yet there want not many inſtances of its having done even that, very many have died in their drunken fit) but that the cuſtom of it does uſually bring Men to their ends is paſt doubt; and therefore though the poyſon work ſlowly, yet it is ſtill poyſon. But however it doth at the preſent work that which a wiſe Man would more abhor than death; it works madneſs, and phrenzy, turns the Man into

a

a beaſt, by drowning that reaſon which ſhould difference him from one. Certainly the effects of drink are ſuch, that had being drunk been firſt enjoyned as a puniſhment, we ſhould have thought him a more than ordinary Tyrant that had invented it.

4. A ſecond end of drinking is ſaid to be the maintaining of friendſhip, and kindneſs amongſt Men. But this is ſtrangely unreaſonable, that Men ſhould do that towards the maintaining of friendſhip, which is really the greateſt miſchief that can be done to any man. Did ever any think to befriend a Man by helping to deſtroy his eſtate, his credit, his life? Yet he that thus drinks with a Man, does this and much more; he ruines his reaſon, yea, his ſoul, and yet this muſt be called the way of preſerving of friendſhip. This is ſo ridiculous, that one would think none could own it but when he were actually drunk. But beſides, alas! experience ſhews us, that this is fitter to beget quarrels than preſerve kindneſs, as the many drunken brawls we every day ſee, with the wounds, and ſometimes murders that accompany them, do witneſs. *Preſerving of kindneſs.*

5. A third end is ſaid to be the chearing of their ſpirits, making them merry and jolly. But ſure if the mirth be ſuch that reaſon muſt be turned out of doors before it begin, it will be very little worth; one may ſay with *Solomon*, Eccleſ. 2. 2. *The laughter of ſuch fools is madneſs.* And ſure they that will be drunk to *Chearing the ſpirits.*

put themſelves in this temper, muſt by the ſame reaſon be glad of a Frenzy, if they could but be ſure it would be of the merry ſort. But little do theſe merry folks think what ſadneſs they are all this while heaping up to themſelves, often in this World, when by ſome mad pranks they play in their jollity, they bring miſchief upon themſelves, but however certainly in another, where this mirth will be ſadly reckoned for.

Putting away cares.

6. A fourth end is ſaid to be the putting away of cares: but I ſhall ask what thoſe cares are? Be they ſuch as ſhould be put away? Perhaps they are ſome checks and remorſes of conſcience, which muſt be thus charmed. And I doubt this hath proved too effectual with many to the laying them aſleep. But this is the wickedeſt folly in the World; for if thou thinkeſt not theſe checks to have ſomething conſiderable in them, why do they trouble thee? But if thou do, it is impoſſible thou canſt hope this can long ſecure thee from them. Thou mayeſt thus ſtop their mouths for a while, but they will one day cry the louder for it. Suppoſe a Thief or a Murderer knew he were purſued to be brought to Juſtice, would he, think you, to put away the fear of being hanged, fall to drinking, and in the mean time take no care for his eſcape? or would you not think him deſperately mad, if he did? Yet this is the very caſe here, thy conſcience tells thee of thy danger, that thou muſt ere long be brought before God's Judgment-ſeat; and is it not madneſs for thee, inſtead of endeavouring to get thy pardon, to drink away the thought of thy danger?

danger? But in the second place, suppose these cares be some worldly ones, and such as are fit to be put away; then for shame do not so disgrace thy Reason, thy Christianity, as not to let them be as forcible to that end as a little drink. Thy reason will tell thee it is in vain to care, where care will bring no advantage: and thy Christianity will direct thee to one on whom thou mayest *safely cast all thy cares, for he careth for thee*, 1 *Pet.* 5. 7. And therefore unless thou meanest to renounce being both a Man and a Christian, never betake thee to this, pitiful shift to rid thee of thy cares. But besides, this will not do the deed neither, for though it may at the present, whilst thou art in the height of the drunken fit, keep thee from the sense of thy cares, yet when that is over, they will return again with greater violence; and, if thou hast any conscience, bring a new care with them, even that which ariseth from the guilt of so foul a sin.

Passing away of time.

7. A fifth end is said to be the passing away of Time. This, though it be as unreasonable as any of the former; yet by the way, it serves to reproach idleness, which is, it seems, so burdensom a thing, that even this vilest employment is preferred before it. But this is in many a very false plea. For they often spend time at the Pot, not only when they have nothing else to do, but even to the neglect of their most necessary business. However it is in all a most unreasonable one, for there is no Man but he may find somewhat or other to employ himself in. If he have little worldly business of his own, he may yet

do ſomewhat to the benefit of others; but however there is no Man but hath a Soul, and if he will look carefully to that, he need not complain for want of buſineſs: where there are ſo many corruptions to mortifie, ſo many inclinations to watch over, ſo many temptations (whereof this of drunkenneſs is not the leaſt) to reſiſt, the Graces of God to improve and ſtir up, and former neglects of all theſe to lament, ſure there can never want ſufficient employment; for all theſe require time, and ſo Men at their deaths find: for thoſe that have all their lives made it their buſineſs to drive away their time, would then give all the World to redeem it. And ſure where there is much leiſure from worldly affairs, God expects to have the more time thus employed in ſpiritual exerciſes. But it is not likely thoſe meaner ſort of perſons, to whom this book is intended, will be of the number of thoſe that have much leiſure, and therefore I ſhall no farther inſiſt on it, only I ſhall ſay this, that what degrees of leiſure they at any time have, it concerns them to employ to the benefit of their Souls, and not to beſtow it to the ruine of them, as they do, who ſpend it in drinking.

Preventing reproach.

8. A ſixth end is ſaid to be the preventing of that reproach which is by the World caſt on thoſe that will in this be ſtricter than their neighbours. But in anſwer to this, I ſhall firſt ask, what is the harm of ſuch reproach? Sure it cannot equal the leaſt of thoſe miſchiefs drunkenneſs betrays us to. Nay, if we will take our Saviour's word, it is a happi-

neſs.

neſs. *Bleſſed*, ſaith he, *are ye when men ſhall revile you, and ſay all manner of evil againſt you for my ſake*, Matth. 5. 11. And S. *Peter* tells us, 1 *Pet.* 4. 14. *If ye be reproached for the Name of Chriſt, happy are ye:* and ſure to be reproached for obedience to any command of Chriſt's, is to be reproached for his Name. Secondly, let it be remembred that at our Baptiſm we ſolemnly renounced the World; and ſhall we now ſo far conſider it, as for a few ſcoffs of it to run our ſelves on all the temporal evils before mentioned; and which is much worſe, the wrath of God and eternal deſtruction? But thirdly, if you fear reproach, why do ye do that which will bring reproach upon you from all wiſe and good Men, whoſe opinion alone is to be regarded? And it is certain, drinking is the way to bring it on you from all ſuch. And to comfort thy ſelf againſt that, by thinking thou art ſtill applauded by the fooliſh and worſt ſort of Men, is as if all the mad-men in the World ſhould agree to count themſelves the only ſober perſons, and all others mad, which yet ſure will never make them the leſs mad, nor others the leſs ſober. Laſtly, Conſider the heavy doom Chriſt hath pronounced on thoſe that are aſhamed of him, and ſo are all thoſe that for fear of reproach ſhall ſhrink from their obedience to him, *Matth.* 8. 38. *Whoſoever ſhall be aſhamed of me and of my words in this adulterous and ſinful generation, of him ſhall the Son of man be aſhamed, when he cometh in the glory of the Father with the holy Angels.* There is none but will at that day deſire to be owned by Chriſt: but whoever will not here

own him, that is, cleave faſt to his commands, notwithſtanding all the ſcorns, nay, perſecutions of the World, ſhall then certainly be caſt off by him. And he that will adventure thus to maintain his credit among a company of Fools and Madmen, deſerves well to have it befal him: But after all this, it is not ſure that even theſe will deſpiſe thee for thy ſobriety: it is poſſible they may ſeem to do ſo to fright thee out of it; but if their hearts were ſearched, it would be found they do even againſt their wills bear a ſecret reverence to ſober perſons, and none fall more often under their ſcorn and deſpiſing, than thoſe that run with them to the ſame exceſs of riot; for even he that ſticks not to be drunk himſelf, will yet laugh at another that he ſees ſo.

Pleaſure of the drink.

9. There is a ſeventh end which though every Man thinks too baſe to own, yet it is too plain it prevails with many; and that is the bare pleaſure of the drink: but to theſe I confeſs it will not be fit to ſay much, for he that is come to this lamentable degree of ſottiſhneſs, is not like to receive benefit by any thing can be ſaid: yet let me tell even this Man, that he of all others hath the moſt means of diſcerning his fault; for this being ſuch a ground of drinking as no body will own, he is condemned of himſelf; yea, and all his fellow-drunkards too; for their denying it, is a plain ſign they acknowledge it a moſt abominable thing. And if *Eſau* were called a prophane perſon, *Heb.* 12. 6. for *ſelling but his birth-right for a meſs of pottage*, and that too when he had the neceſſity of hunger upon

on him: what name of reproach can be bad enough for him who ſells his health, his reaſon, his God, his Soul for a cup of drink, and that when he is ſo far from needing it, that perhaps he hath already more than he can keep? I ſhall ſay no more to this ſort of perſons, but let me warn all thoſe that go on in this ſin on any of the former grounds, that a little time will bring them even to this which they profeſs to loath; it being daily ſeen that thoſe which firſt were drawn into the ſin for the love of the company, at laſt continue in it for love of the drink.

10. I can think but of one end more, that is, that of bargaining. Men ſay it is neceſſary for them to drink in this one reſpect of trading with their neighbours, bargains being moſt conveniently to be ſtruck up at ſuch meetings. But this is yet a worſe end than all the reſt, for the bottom of it is an aim of cheating and defrauding others; we think when Men are in drink we ſhall the better be able to over-reach them, and ſo this adds the ſin of couzenage and defrauding to that of drunkenneſs. Now that this is indeed the intent is manifeſt, for if it were only the diſpatch of bargains were aimed at, we ſhould chuſe to take Men with their wits about them: therefore the taking them when drink hath diſtempered them can be for nothing but to make advantage of them. Yet this often proves a great folly as well as a ſin; for he that drinks with another in hope to over-reach him, doth many times prove the weaker brain'd, and becomes drunk firſt, and then he gives the other

Bargaining.

that opportunity of cheating him, which he designed for the cheating of the other. Now this end of drinking is so far from becoming an excuse, that it is a huge heightning of the sin; for if we may not drink intemperately upon any occasion, much less upon so wicked an one as is the couzening and defrauding of our brethren.

Degrees of this sin.

11. I suppose I have now shewed you the unreasonableness of those Motives, which are ordinarily brought in excuse of this sin. I am yet further to tell you, that it is not only that huge degree of drunkenness which makes Men able neither to go nor speak, which is to be lookt on as a sin, but all lower degrees, which do at all work upon the understanding, whether by dulling it and making it less fit for any imployment, or by making it too light and aiery, apt to apish and ridiculous mirth, or what is worse, by inflaming Men into rage and fury. These or whatever else make any change in the Man, are to be reckoned into this sin of drunkenness: Nay, further the drinking beyond the natural ends of drinking, that is, beyond moderate refreshment, is a sin, though by the strength of a Man's brain it makes not the least change in him, and therefore those that are not actually drunk, yet can spend whole days, or any considerable part of them in drinking, are so far from being innocent, that that greater woe belongs to them which is pronounced, *Isa.* 5. 22. against those that are mighty to drink. For though such a Man may make a shift to preserve his wits, yet that wit serves him to very little purpose,

purpoſe, when his employment is ſtill but the ſame with him that is the moſt ſottiſhly drunk, that is, to pour down drink.

The great guilt of the ſtrong drinkers.

12. Nay, this Man is guilty of the greateſt waſte; Firſt, of the good creatures of God; That drink which is by God's providence intended for the refreſhing and relieving of us, is abuſed and miſ-ſpent when it is drunk beyond that meaſure which thoſe ends require; and ſure there is not the meaneſt of theſe creatures we enjoy, but the abuſe of them ſhall one day be accounted for, and he that drinks longeſt hath the moſt of that guilt. But in the ſecond place, this is a waſte of that which is much more precious, our time, which is allowed us by God to work out our Salvation in, and muſt be ſtrictly reckoned for, and therefore ought every minute of it to be moſt thriftily husbanded to that end in actions of good life; but when it is thus laid out, it tends to the direct contrary, even the working out our damnation. Beſides, he that thus drinks though he eſcape being drunk himſelf, he is yet guilty of all the drunkenneſs that any of his company fall under; for he gives them encouragement to drink on by his Example, eſpecially if he be one of any Authority; but if he be one whoſe company the reſt are fond of, his company is then a certain enſnaring of them; for then they will drink too, rather than loſe him. There is yet a greater fault that many of theſe ſtronger brain'd drinkers are guilty of, that is, the ſetting themſelves purpoſely to make others drunk, playing,

as it were a prize at it, and counting it matter of triumph and victory to ſee others fall before them: This is a moſt horrible wickedneſs, it is the making our ſelves the Devil's Factors, endeavouring all we can to draw our poor brethren into eternal miſery, by betraying them to ſo grievous a ſin; and therefore it may well be reckoned as the higheſt ſtep of this vice of drinking, as having in it the ſin of miſchieving others added to the exceſs in our ſelves. And though it be lookt upon in the World as a matter only of jeſt and merriment to make others drunk, that we may ſport our ſelves with their ridiculous behaviour, yet that mirth will have a ſad concluſion, there being a woe expreſly threatned by God to this very ſin, *Hab.* 2. 15. *Wo unto him that giveth his neighbour drink, that putteſt thy bottle to him, and makeſt him drunk, that thou mayeſt look on their nakedneſs:* And ſure he buys his idle paſtime very dear, that takes it with ſuch a Woe attending it.

The great miſchiefs of this ſin.

13. I have now gone through the ſeveral motives to, and degrees of this ſin of drunkenneſs, wherein I have been the more particular, becauſe it is a ſin ſo ſtrangely reigning amongſt us: no Condition, no Age, or ſcarce Sex free from it, to the great diſhonour of God, reproach of Chriſtianity, and ruine not only of our own Souls hereafter, but even of all our preſent advantages and happineſs in this life; there being no ſin which betrays each ſingle committer to more miſchiefs in his underſtanding, his health, his credit,

credit, his eſtate, than this one doth. And we have reaſon to believe this ſin is one of thoſe common crying guilts which have long lain heavy upon this Nation, and pulled down thoſe many ſad judgments we have groaned under.

14. Therefore, Chriſtian Reader, let me now intreat, nay conjure thee by all that tenderneſs and love thou oughteſt to have to the honour of God, the Credit of thy Chriſtian profeſſion, eternal welfare of thine own Soul, the proſperity of the Church and Nation, whereof thou art a member; Nay, by that love which certainly thou haſt to thy own temporal welfare, to think ſadly of what hath been ſpoken; and then judge, whether there be any pleaſure in this ſin which can be any tolerable recompence for all thoſe miſchiefs it brings with it. I am confident no Man in his wits can think there is, and if there be not, then be aſhamed to be any longer that fool, which ſhall make ſo wretched a bargain, but begin at this inſtant a firm and a faithful reſolution, never once more to be guilty of this ſwiniſh ſin, how often ſoever thou haſt heretofore fallen into it, and in the fear of God betake thee to a ſtrict temperance, which when thou haſt done thou wilt find thou haſt made, not only a gainful but a pleaſant exchange; for there is no Man that hath tried both courſes, but his own heart will tell him there is infinitely more preſent comfort and pleaſure in ſobriety and temperance, than ever all his drunken revellings afforded him.

Exhortation to forſake it.

15. The

The difficulties of doing ſo conſidered.

15. The main difficulty is the firſt breaking off the cuſtom, and that ariſes partly from our ſelves; partly from others. That from our ſelves may be of two ſorts; the firſt is, when by the habit of drinking, we have brought ſuch falſe thirſts upon our ſelves, that our bodies ſeem to require it, and this wants nothing but a little patience to overcome. Do but refrain ſome few days, and it will afterwards grow eaſie; for the hardneſs ariſing only from cuſtom, the breaking off that does the buſineſs. If thou ſay, it is very uneaſie to do ſo, conſider, whether if thou hadſt ſome diſeaſe which would certainly kill thee if thou didſt not for ſome little time refrain immoderate drinking, thou wouldſt not rather forbear than die. If thou wouldſt not, thou art ſo brutiſh a ſot, that it is in vain to perſwade thee; but if thou hadſt, then conſider how unreaſonable it is for thee not to do it in this caſe alſo; the habit of drinking may well paſs for a mortal diſeaſe, it proves ſo very often to the body, but will moſt certainly to the Soul; and therefore it is madneſs to ſtick at that uneaſineſs in the cure of this, which thou wouldſt ſubmit to in a leſs danger. Set therefore but a reſolute purpoſe to endure that little trouble for a ſmall time, and this firſt difficulty is conquered, for after thou haſt a while refrained, it will be perfectly eaſie to do ſo ſtill.

Seeming neceſſity of drink.

16. The

16. The ſecond difficulty is that of ſpending the time, which thoſe that have made drinking their trade and buſineſs, know ſcarce how to diſpoſe of. But the very naming of this difficulty directs to the cure; get thee ſome buſineſs, ſomewhat to employ thy ſelf in, which, as I have already ſhewed, will be eaſily found by all ſorts of perſons; but thoſe meaner, to whom I now write, can ſure never want it ready at hand, they being generally ſuch as are to be maintained by their labour, and therefore to them I need only give this advice, to be diligent in that buſineſs they have, to follow that cloſe as they ought; and they will have little occaſion to ſeek out this way of ſpending their time. *Want of imployment.*

17. There is another ſort of difficulty, which I told you ariſes from others, and that is either from their perſwaſions or reproaches. It is very likely, if thy old companions ſee thee begin to fall off, they will ſet hard to thee, to bring thee back to thy old courſe, they will urge to thee the unkindneſs of forſaking the company of thy friends, the ſadneſs of renouncing all that mirth and jollity, which good fellows (as they call them) enjoy, and if thou canſt not thus be won, they will affright thee with the reproach of the World, and ſo try if they can mock thee out of thy ſobriety. *Perſwaſions and reproaches of men.*

18. The

The means of resisting them.

18. The way to overcome this difficulty is to foresee it: therefore when thou first entrest on thy course of temperance, thou art to make account thou shalt meet with these (perhaps many other) temptations; and that thou mayest make a right judgment, whether they be worthy to prevail with thee, take them before-hand and weigh them, consider whether that false kindness that is maintained among Men by drinking, be worthy to be compared with that real and everlasting kindness of God, which is lost by it; whether that fooliſh, vain mirth bear any weight with the present joys of a good conscience here, or with those greater of Heaven hereafter. Lastly, whether the unjust reproach of wicked Men, the shame of the World be so terrible, as the just reproof of thine own conscience at the present, and that eternal confusion of face that shall befal all those, that go on in this sin, at the last day; weigh all these, I say, I need not say in the balance of the Sanctuary, but even in the scales of common reason, and sure thou wilt be forced to pronounce, that the motives to temperance infinitely outweigh those against it. When thou hast thus advisedly judged, then fix thy resolution accordingly; and whenever any of these temptations come to stagger thee, remember thou hast formerly weighed them, knowest the just value of them, and that they are a most unworthy price for those precious advantages thou must give in exchange

Weigh the advantages with the hurt.

exchange for them. And therefore hold faſt thy reſolution, and with indignation reject all motions to the contrary.

19. But be ſure thou thus reject them at their very firſt tender, and do not yield in the leaſt degree; for if once thou giveſt ground, thou art loſt, the ſin will by little and little prevail upon thee. Thus we ſee many, who have profeſſed to be reſolved upon great temperance, yet for want of this care, have adventured into the company of good fellows; when they have been there, they have at the firſt been over-intreated to take a cup, after that another, till at laſt they have taken their rounds as freely as any of them, and in that floud of drink drowned all their ſober reſolutions. Therefore whoever thou art, that doſt really deſire to forſake the ſin, take care to avoid the occaſions and beginnings of it; to which end it will be good openly to declare and own thy purpoſes of ſobriety; that ſo thou mayeſt diſcourage Men from aſſaulting thee. But if either thou art aſhamed to own it, or ſeemeſt to be ſo, they will quickly make uſe of that ſhame to bring thee to break it.

Reject the temptation at the very beginning.

20. If thou be thus wary to keep thee from the firſt beginnings, thou art then ſure never to be overtaken with this ſin; for it is like the keeping the out-works of a beſieged City, which ſo long as they are ſtoutly defended, there is no danger; but if they be either ſurprized or yielded, the City cannot long hold out.

The ſecurity of doing ſo.

The

The advice therefore of the Wiſe man is very agreeable to this matter, *Eccleſ.* 19. 1. *He that deſpiſeth ſmall things, ſhall periſh by little and little.* But becauſe, as the *Pſalmiſt* ſaith, *Pſalm* 127. 1. *Except the Lord keep the City, the watchman waketh but in vain:* therefore to this guard of thy ſelf add thy moſt earneſt prayers to God, that he will alſo watch over thee, and by the ſtrength of his grace enable thee to reſiſt all temptations to this ſin.

The efficacy of theſe means if not hindred by love of the ſin.

21. If thou do in the ſincerity of thy heart uſe theſe means, there is no doubt but thou wilt be able to overcome this vice, how long ſoever thou haſt been accuſtomed to it; therefore if thou do ſtill remain under the power of it, never excuſe thy ſelf by the impoſſibility of the task, but rather accuſe the falſeneſs of thy own heart, that hath ſtill ſuch a love to this ſin, that thou wilt not ſet roundly to the means of ſubduing it.

That love makes a man loth to believe it dangerous.

22. Perhaps the great commonneſs of the ſin, and thy particular cuſtom of it may have made it ſo much thy familiar, thy boſom acquaintance, that thou art loth to entertain hard thoughts of it, very unwilling thou art to think that it means thee any hurt, and therefore art apt to ſpeak peace to thy ſelf, to hope that either this is no ſin, or at moſt but a frailty, ſuch as will not bar thee out of Heaven: but deceive not thy ſelf, for thou mayeſt

as well ſay there is no Heaven, as that drunkenneſs ſhall not keep thee thence; I am ſure the ſame word of God which tells us there is ſuch a place of happineſs, tells us alſo that drunkards are of the number of thoſe that ſhall not inherit it, 1 *Cor.* 6. 10. And again, *Gal.* 5. 21. Drunkenneſs is reckoned among thoſe works of the fleſh, which they that do *ſhall not inherit the Kingdom of God.* And indeed had not theſe plain texts, yet meer reaſon would tell us the ſame, that that is a place of infinite purity, ſuch as fleſh and bloud, till it be refined and purified, is not capable of, as the Apoſtle tells us, 1 *Cor.* 15. 53. and if as we are meer Men, we are too groſs and impure for it, we muſt ſure be more ſo when we have changed our ſelves into Swine, the fouleſt of Beaſts, we are then prepared for the Devils to enter into, as they did into the herd, *Mark* 5. 13. and that not only ſome one or two, but a Legion, a troop and multitude of them. And of this we daily ſee examples, for where this ſin of drunkenneſs hath taken poſſeſſion, it uſually comes as an harbinger to abundance of others; each act of drunkenneſs prepares a Man not only for another of the ſame ſin, but of others: luſt and rage, and all brutiſh appetites are then let looſe, and ſo a Man brings himſelf under that curſe, which was the ſaddeſt *David* knew how to foretell to any, *Pſalm* 63. 28. *The falling from one wickedneſs to another.* If all this be not enough to affright thee out of this drunken fit, thou mayeſt ſtill wallow in thy vomit, continue in this ſottiſh, ſenſeleſs condition, till the flames of Hell rowſe thee, and then thou wilt

by

by ſad experience find what now thou wilt not believe, *That the end of thoſe things*, as the Apoſtle ſaith, *Rom.6.21. is death.* God in his infinite mercy timely awake the hearts of all that are in this ſin, that by a timely forſaking it they may *fly from the wrath to come.* I have now done with this ſecond part of Temperance, concerning Drinking.

SUNDAY IX.

Temperance in Sleep: the rule of it, &c. Miſchiefs of Sloth, Of Recreations: Cautions to be obſerved in them; of Apparel, &c.

Sect. 1. *Sleep.* THE Third part of TEMPERANCE concerns SLEEP. And Temperance in that alſo muſt be meaſured by the end for which ſleep was ordained by God, which was only the refreſhing and ſupporting of our frail bodies, which being of ſuch a Temper that continual labour and toil tires and wearies them out, Sleep comes as a medicine to that wearineſs, as a repairer of that decay, that ſo we may be enabled to ſuch labours as the duties of Religion, or works of our Calling require of us. Sleep was intended to make us more profitable, not more idle;

idle; as we give reſt to our Beaſts, not that we are pleaſed with their doing nothing, but that they may do us the better ſervice.

The Rule of Temperance therein.

2. By this therefore you may judge what is temperate ſleeping; to wit, that which tends to the refreſhing and making us more lively and fit for action, and to that end a moderate degree ſerves beſt. It will be impoſſible to ſet down juſt how many hours is that moderate degree, becauſe, as in eating, ſo in ſleep, ſome conſtitutions require more than others: Every Man's own experience muſt in this judge for him, but then let him judge uprightly, and not conſult with his ſloth in the caſe; for that will ſtill, with *Solomon*'s ſluggard, cry, *A little more ſleep, a little more ſlumber, a little more folding of the hands to ſleep*, *Prov.* 24. 23. But take only ſo much as he really finds to tend to the end forementioned.

The many Sins that follow the tranſgreſſion of it.

3. He that doth not thus limit himſelf falls into ſeveral ſins under this general one of ſloth: as firſt, he waſtes his time, that precious talent which was committed to him by God to improve, which he that ſleeps away, doth like him in the Goſpel, *Matth.* 25. 18. *Hides it in the earth*, when he ſhould be trading with it; and you know what was the doom of that unprofitable ſervant, Verſe 30. *Caſt ye him into outer darkneſs*: he that gives himſelf to darkneſs of ſleep here, ſhall there have darkneſs without ſleep, but with *weeping and gnaſhing of*

teeth

teeth. Secondly, he injures his body: immoderate ſleep fills that full of diſeaſes, makes it a very ſink of humours, as daily experience ſhews us. Thirdly, he injures his Soul alſo, and that not only in robbing it of the ſervice of the body, but in dulling its proper faculties, making them uſeleſs and unfit for thoſe employments to which God hath deſigned them; of all which ill husbandry the poor Soul muſt one day give account. Nay, laſtly, he affronts and deſpiſes God himſelf in it, by croſſing the very end of his creation; which was to ſerve God in an active obedience; but he that ſleeps away his life, directly thwarts and contradicts that, and when God ſaith, *Man is born to labour*, his practice ſaith the direct contrary, that Man is born to reſt. Take heed therefore of giving thy ſelf to immoderate ſleep, which is the committing of ſo many ſins in one.

Other miſchiefs of ſloth.

4. But beſides the ſin of it, it is alſo very hurtful in other reſpects, it is the ſure bane of thy outward eſtate, wherein the ſluggiſh perſon ſhall never thrive; according to that obſervation of the Wiſe man, *Prov.* 23. 21. *Drowſineſs ſhall cover a man with rags*; that is, the ſlothful Man ſhall want convenient clothing, nay, indeed it can ſcarce be ſaid, that the ſluggard lives. Sleep you know is a kind of death, and he that gives himſelf up to it, what doth he but die before his time? Therefore if untimely death be to be lookt upon as a curſe, it muſt needs be a ſtrange folly to chuſe that from our own ſloth which we dread ſo much from God's hand.

5. The

5. The fourth part of Temperance concerns Recreations, which are ſometimes neceſſary both to the body and the mind of a Man, neither of them being able to endure a conſtant toil without ſomewhat of refreſhment between; and therefore there is a very lawful uſe of them; but to make it ſo, it will be neceſſary to obſerve theſe Cautions. *Temperance in Recreation.*

6. Firſt, We muſt take care that the kind of them be lawful, that they be ſuch as have nothing of ſin in them; we muſt not to recreate our ſelves do any thing which is diſhonourable to God, or injurious to our neighbour, as they do who make profane or filthy backbiting diſcourſe their recreation. Secondly, we muſt take care that we uſe it with moderation: and to do ſo, we muſt firſt be ſure not to ſpend too much time upon it, but remember that the end of recreation is to fit us for buſineſs, not to be it ſelf a buſineſs to us. Secondly, we muſt not be too vehement and earneſt in it, nor ſet our hearts too much upon it; for that will both enſnare us to the uſing too much of it, and it will divert and take off our minds from our more neceſſary employments: like School-boys, who after a play-time, know not how to ſet themſelves to their Books again. Laſtly, we muſt not ſet up to our ſelves any other end of recreations but that lawful one, of giving us moderate refreſhment. *Cautions to be obſerved in them.*

Undue ends of Sports.

7. As firſt, we are not to uſe Sports only to paſs away our time, which we ought to ſtudy how to redeem, not fling away; and when it is remembred how great a work we have here to do, the *making our calling and election ſure*, the ſecuring our title to Heaven hereafter, and how uncertain we are what time ſhall be allowed us for that purpoſe; it will appear our time is that which of all other things we ought moſt induſtriouſly to improve. And therefore ſure we have little need to contrive ways of driving that away which flies ſo faſt of it ſelf, and is ſo impoſſible to recover. Let them that can ſpend whole Days and Nights at Cards and Dice, and idle paſtimes conſider this, and withal, whether they ever beſtowed a quarter of that time towards that great buſineſs of their lives, for which all their time was given them, and then think what a woful reckoning they are like to make when they come at laſt to account for that precious treaſure of their time. Secondly, we muſt not let our covetouſneſs have any thing to do in our recreations; if we play at any Game, let the end of our doing it be meerly to recreate our ſelves, not to win money, and to that purpoſe be ſure never to play for any conſiderable matter, for if thou do, thou wilt bring thy ſelf into two dangers, the one of covetouſneſs, and a greedy deſire of winning, the other of rage and anger at thy ill fortune, if thou happen to loſe; both which will be apt to draw thee into other ſins beſides themſelves. Covetouſneſs will tempt thee to cheat and cozen in gaming, and

and anger to ſwearing and curſing, as common experience ſhews us too often. If thou find thy ſelf apt to fall into either of theſe in thy gaming, thou muſt either take ſome courſe to ſecure thy ſelf againſt them, or thou muſt not permit thy ſelf to play at all: for though moderate play be in it ſelf not unlawful, yet if it be the occaſion of ſin, it is ſo to thee, and therefore muſt not be ventured on. For if Chriſt commands us ſo ſtrictly to avoid temptations, that if our very eyes or hands offend us (that is, prove ſnares to us) we muſt rather part with them, than to be drawn to ſin by them: how much rather muſt we part with any of theſe unneceſſary ſports, than run the hazard of offending God by them? He that ſo plays, lays his Soul to ſtake, which is too great a prize to be plaid away. Beſides, he loſes all the recreation and ſport he pretends to aim at, and inſtead of that ſets himſelf to a greater toil than any of thoſe labours are he was to eaſe by it. For ſure the deſires and fears of the covetous, the impatience and rage of the angry man are more real pains than any the moſt laborious work can be.

8. The laſt part of Temperance is that of APPAREL, which we are again to meaſure by the agreeableneſs to the ends for which cloathing ſhould be uſed. Thoſe are eſpecially theſe three: firſt, the hiding of nakedneſs. This was the firſt occaſion of apparel, as you may read, *Gen.* 3. 21. and was the effect of the firſt ſin; and therefore

Temperance in apparel.

Apparel deſigned for covering of ſhame.

when we remember the original of cloaths, we have ſo little reaſon to be proud of them, that on the contrary we have cauſe to be humbled and aſhamed, as having loſt that innocency which was a much greater ornament than any the moſt glorious apparel can be. From this end of cloathing we are likewiſe engaged to have our Apparel modeſt, ſuch as may anſwer this end of covering our ſhame: And therefore all immodeſt faſhions of Apparel, which may either argue the wantonneſs of the wearer, or provoke that of the beholder, are to be avoided.

Fencing from cold.

9. A ſecond end of Apparel is the fencing the body from cold, thereby to preſerve the health thereof. And this end we muſt likewiſe obſerve in our cloathing; we muſt wear ſuch kind of habits, as may keep us in that convenient warmth, which is neceſſary to our healths. And this is tranſgreſt, when out of the vanity of being in every phantaſtick faſhion, we put our ſelves in ſuch clothing, as either will not defend us from cold, or is ſome other way ſo uneaſie that it is rather a hurt than a benefit to our bodies to be ſo clad. This is a moſt ridiculous folly, and yet that which People that take a pride in their cloaths are uſually guilty of.

Diſtinction of perſons.

10. A third end of Apparel is the diſtinguiſhing or differencing of perſons, and that firſt in reſpect of Sex, ſecondly, in reſpect of qualities. Firſt, cloaths are to make difference of Sex; this hath been obſerved by all Nations, the

the habits of Men and Women have always been divers. And God himſelf expreſly provided for it among the *Jews*, by commanding that the Man ſhould not wear the Apparel of the Woman, nor the Woman of the Man. But then ſecondly, there is alſo a diſtinction of qualities to be obſerved in apparel; God hath placed ſome in a higher condition than others, and in proportion to their condition, it befits their cloathing to be. *Gorgeous apparel*, our Saviour tells us, *is for King's Courts*, *Luke* 7. 25. Now this end of apparel ſhould alſo be obſerved. Men and Women ſhould content themſelves with that ſort of cloathing which agrees to their Sex and condition, not ſtriving to exceed, and equal that of a higher rank, nor yet making it matter of envy, among thoſe of their own eſtate, vying who ſhall be fineſt; but let every Man cloath himſelf in ſuch ſober attire as befits his place and calling, and not think himſelf diſparaged, if another of his neighbours have better than he.

11. And let all remember that cloaths are things, which add no true worth to any, and therefore it is an intolerable vanity to ſpend any conſiderable part either of their thoughts, time or wealth upon them, or to value themſelves ever the more for them, or deſpiſe their poor brethren that want them. But if they deſire to adorn themſelves, let it be as *S. Peter* adviſeth the Women of his time, 1 *Pet.* 3. 4. *In the hidden man of the heart, even the ornament of a meek and quiet ſpirit.* Let them cloath themſelves as richly as is poſſible with all Chriſtian Vertues, and that is the raiment that will ſet them out

lovely in God's eyes, yea, and in mens too, who unleſs they be fools and Idiots, will more value thee for being good than fine; and ſure one plain Coat thou putteſt upon a poor Man's back will better become thee, than twenty rich ones thou ſhalt put upon thine own.

Too much ſparing a fault as well as exceſs.

12. I have now gone through the ſeveral parts of temperance, I ſhall now in concluſion add this general caution, that though in all theſe particulars I have taken notice only of the one fault of exceſs, yet it is poſſible there may be one on the other hand: Men may deny their bodies that which they neceſſarily require to their ſupport, and well-being. This is, I believe, a fault not ſo common as the other, yet we ſometimes ſee ſome very niggardly perſons, that are guilty of it, that cannot find in their hearts to borrow ſo much from their cheſts as may fill their bellies, or cloath their backs, and that are ſo intent upon the world, ſo moiling, and drudging in it, that they cannot afford themſelves that competent time of ſleep, or recreation, that is neceſſary. If any that hath read the former part of this Diſcourſe be of this temper, let him not comfort himſelf, that he is not guilty of thoſe exceſſes there complained of, and therefore conclude himſelf a good Chriſtian, becauſe he is not intemperate; for whoever is this covetous creature, his abſtaining ſhall not be counted to him as the vertue of temperance, for it is not the love of temperance, but wealth, that makes him refrain; and that is ſo far from being praiſe-worthy, that it is that great ſin which the Apoſtle tells

tells us, 1 *Tim.* 6. 10. *is the root of all evil*; ſuch a man's body will one day riſe in judgment againſt him, for defrauding it of its due portion, thoſe moderate refreſhments and comforts which God hath allowed it. This is an Idolatry beyond that of offering the children to *Moloch*, *Lev.* 20. 3. they offered but their children, but this covetous wretch ſacrifices himſelf to his god Mammon, whilſt he often deſtroys his health, his life, yea, finally his Soul too, to ſave his purſe. I have now done with the ſecond head of duty, that to our ſelves, contained by the Apoſtle under the word Soberly.

SUNDAY X.

Of Duties to our Neighbour. Of Juſtice, Negative, Poſitive. Of the ſin of Murther, of the hainouſneſs of it, the puniſhments of it, and the ſtrange diſcoveries thereof. Of Maiming, &c.

Sect. 1. I Come now to the third part of Duties, thoſe to our NEIGHBOUR, which are by the Apoſtle ſummed up in groſs in the word [Righteouſneſs] by which is meant not only bare Juſtice, but all kind of Charity alſo, for

Duty to our Neighbour.

that is now by the law of Chriſt become a debt to our neighbour, and it is a piece of unrighteouſneſs to defraud him of it. I ſhall therefore build all the particular duties we owe to our Neighbour, on thoſe two general ones, Juſtice and Charity.

Juſtice.

2. I begin with JUSTICE, whereof there are two parts, the one Negative, the other Poſitive: The negative Juſtice is to do no wrong, or injury to any. The poſitive Juſtice is to do right to all; that is, to yield them whatſoever appertains or is due unto them. I ſhall firſt ſpeak of the Negative Juſtice, the not injuring or wronging any. Now becauſe a Man is capable of receiving wrong in ſeveral reſpects: this firſt part of Juſtice extends it ſelf into ſeveral branches, anſwerable to thoſe capacities of injury. A man may be injured either in his Soul, his Body, his Poſſeſſions, or Credit; and therefore this duty of Negative Juſtice lays a reſtraint on us in every of theſe, That we do no wrong to any Man in reſpect either of his Soul, his Body, his Poſſeſſions, or his Credit.

Negative.

To the Soul.

3. Firſt, This Juſtice ties us to do no hurt to his Soul; and here my firſt work muſt be to examine what harm it is that the Soul can receive; it is, we know, an inviſible ſubſtance, which we cannot reach with our eye, much leſs with our ſwords and weapons, yet for all that it is capable of being hurt and wounded; and that even to death.

4. Now

4. Now the Soul may be conſidered either in a natural or ſpiritual ſenſe; in the natural it ſignifies that which we uſually call the mind of a Man, and this we all know, may be wounded with grief or ſadneſs, as *Solomon* ſaith, *Prov.* 15. 13. *By ſorrow of heart the ſpirit is broken.* Therefore whoever doth cauſleſly afflict or grieve his neighbour, he tranſgreſſeth this part of juſtice, and hurts and wrongs his ſoul. This ſort of injury malicious and ſpiteful Men are very often guilty of, they will do things, by which themſelves reap no good, nay, often much harm, only that they may vex and grieve another; this is a moſt ſavage, inhumane humour, thus to take pleaſure in the ſadneſs and afflictions of others; and whoever harbours it in his heart, may truly be ſaid to be poſſeſt with the Devil, for it is the nature only of thoſe accurſed ſpirits to delight in the miſeries of Men; and till that be caſt out they are fit only to dwell as the poſſeſt perſon did, *Mark* 5. 2. *among graves and tombs*, where there are none capable of receiving affliction by them. *In the natural ſenſe.*

5. But the Soul may be conſidered alſo in the ſpiritual ſence, and ſo it ſignifies that immortal part of us which muſt live eternally, either in bliſs or woe in another world. And the Soul thus underſtood is capable of two ſorts of harm: Firſt, that of ſin; Secondly, that of puniſhment; the latter whereof is certainly the conſequent of the former; and therefore though God be the inflicter of puniſhment, yet ſince it *In the ſpiritual.*

is but the effect of ſin, we may juſtly reckon, that he that draws a man to ſin, is likewiſe the betrayer of him to puniſhment, as he that gives a man a mortal wound, is the cauſe of his death; therefore under the evil of ſin both are contained, ſo that I need ſpeak only of that.

Drawing to ſin the greateſt injury.

6. And ſure there cannot be a higher ſort of wrong than the bringing this great evil upon the Soul. Sin is the diſeaſe and wound of the Soul, as being the direct contrary to Grace; which is the health and ſoundneſs of it; now this wound we give to every ſoul, whom we do by any means whatſoever draw into ſin.

Direct means of it.

7. The way of doing that are divers, I ſhall mention ſome of them, whereof though ſome are more direct than others, yet all tend to the ſame end. Of the more direct ones there is, firſt, the commanding of ſin, that is, when a perſon that hath power over another ſhall require him to do ſomething which is unlawful; an example of this we have in *Nebuchadnezzar's* commanding the worſhip of the golden Image, *Dan.* 3. 4. and his copy is imitated by any Parent or Maſter, who ſhall require of his child or ſervant to do any unlawful act. Secondly, there is counſelling of ſin, when men adviſe and perſwade others to any wickedneſs: Thus *Job's* Wife counſelled her Husband to curſe God, *Job* 2. 7. And *Achitophel* adviſed *Abſalom* to go in to his Father's Concubines, 2 *Sam.* 16. 21. Thirdly, there is enticing and alluring

alluring to sin, by setting before Men the pleasures or profits they shall reap by it. Of this sort of enticement *Solomon* gives warning, *Prov.* 1. 10. *My son if sinners entice thee, consent thou not; if they say, Come with us, let us lay wait for bloud, let us lurk privily for the innocent without a cause*, &c. and verse the 13. you may see what is the bait, by which they seek to allure them, *We shall find all precious substance; we shall fill our houses with spoil. Cast in thy lot among us, let us all have one purse.* Fourthly, there is assistance in sin, that is, when Men aid and help others either in contriving or acting a sin. Thus *Jonadab* helpt *Amnon* in plotting the ravishing of his Sister, 2 *Sam.* 13. All these are direct means of bringing this great evil of sin upon our brethren.

8. There are also others, which though they seem more indirect, may yet be as effectual towards that ill end: as first, example in sin, he that sets others an ill pattern, does his part to make them imitate it, and too often it hath that effect; there being generally nothing more forcible to bring men into any sinful practice, than the seeing it used by others, as might be instanced in many sins to which there is no other temptation, but their being in fashion. Secondly, there is incouragement in sin, when either by approving, or else at least by not shewing a dislike, we give others confidence to go on in their wickedness. A third means is by justifying and defending any sinful act of anothers, for by that we do not only confirm him in his evil, but endanger the drawing others to the like, who may be the *Indirect.*

more inclinable to it, when they ſhall hear it ſo pleaded for. Laſtly, the bringing up any reproach upon ſtrict and Chriſtian living, as thoſe do who have the ways of God in deriſion: this is a means to affright Men from the practice of duty, when they ſee it will bring them to be ſcorned and deſpiſed; this is worſe than all the former, not only in reſpect of the Man who is guilty of it (as it is an evidence of the great profaneneſs of his own heart) but alſo in regard of others, it having a more general ill effect than any of the former can have; it being the betraying Men, not only to ſome ſingle acts of diſobedience to Chriſt, but even to the caſting off all ſubjection to him; by all theſe means we may draw on our ſelves this great guilt of injuring and wounding the ſouls of our brethren.

Men ſadly to conſider whom they have thus injured.

9. It would be too long for me to inſtance in all the ſeveral ſins, in which it is uſual for Men to enſnare others; as drunkenneſs, uncleanneſs, rebellion, and a multitude more. But it will concern every Man for his own particular, to conſider ſadly what miſchiefs of this kind he hath done to any, by all, or any of theſe means, and to weigh well the greatneſs of the injury. Men are apt to boaſt of their innocency towards their Neighbours, that they have done wrong to no Man; but God knows many that thus brag, are of all others the moſt injurious perſons: perhaps they have not maimed his body, nor ſtoln his goods, but alas! the body is but the caſe and cover of the Man and the

the goods ſome appurtenances to that, 'tis the ſoul is the man, and that they can wound and pierce without remorſe, and yet with the adultereſs, *Prov.* 30. 20. *ſay, they have done no wickedneſs*; but glory of their friendly behaviour to thoſe whom they thus betray to eternal ruine; for whomſoever thou haſt drawn to any ſin, thou haſt done thy part to aſcertain to thoſe endleſs flames. And then think with thy ſelf how baſe a treachery this is: thou wouldeſt call him a treacherous Villain, that ſhould, while he pretends to embrace a Man, ſecretly ſtab him: but this of thine is as far beyond that, as the ſoul is of more value than the body: and Hell worſe than death. And remember yet farther, that beſides the cruelty of it to thy poor brother, it is alſo moſt dangerous to thy ſelf, it being that againſt which Chriſt hath pronounced a woe, *Matth.* 18. 7. and Verſe 6. he tells us that, *whoever ſhall offend* (that is, draw into ſin) *any of thoſe little ones, it were better for him that a milſtone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the Sea.* Thou mayeſt plunge thy poor brother into perdition, but as it is with wreſtlers, he that gives another a fall, commonly falls with him, ſo thou art like to bear him company to that place of torment.

Heartily to bewail it.

10. Let therefore thy own and his danger beget in thee a ſenſe of the greatneſs of this ſin, this horrid piece of injuſtice to the precious ſoul of thy neighbour. Bethink thy ſelf ſeriouſly to whom thou haſt been thus cruel; whom thou haſt enticed to drinking, adviſed to rebellion,

rebellion allured to luſt, ſtirred up to rage, whom thou haſt aſſiſted or incouraged in any ill courſe, or diſcouraged and diſheartned by thy prophane ſcoffings at piety in general, or at any conſcionable ſtrict walking of his in particular; and then draw up a bill of indictment; accuſe and condemn thy ſelf as a *Cain*, a murderer of thy brother, heartily and deeply bewail all thy guilts of this kind, and reſolve never once more to be a ſtumbling block, as *S. Paul* calls it, *Rom.* 14. in thy brother's way.

Endeavour to repair it.

11. But this is not all, there muſt be ſome fruits of this repentance brought forth: now in all ſins of injuſtice, reſtitution is a neceſſary fruit of repentance, and ſo it is here, thou haſt committed an act (perhaps many) of high injuſtice to the ſoul of thy brother; thou haſt robbed it of its innocency, of its title to Heaven, thou muſt now endeavour to reſtore all this to it again, by being more earneſt and induſtrious to win him to repentance, than ever thou wert to draw him to ſin: uſe now as much art to convince him of the danger, as ever thou didſt to flatter him with the pleaſures of his vice; in a word, countermine thy ſelf by uſing all thoſe methods and means to recover him, that thou didſt to deſtroy him, and be more diligent and zealous in it; for 'tis neceſſary thou ſhouldſt, both in regard of him and thy ſelf. Firſt in reſpect of him, becauſe there is in Man's nature ſo much a greater promptneſs and readineſs to evil than to good, and there will need much more pains and diligence to inſtil the one into him, than

than the other: beſides, the Man is ſuppoſed to be already accuſtomed to the contrary, which will add much to the difficulty of the work. Then in reſpect of thy ſelf, if thou be a true penitent, thou wilt think thy ſelf obliged, as *S. Paul* did, *To labour more abundantly*, and wilt be aſhamed, that when thou art trading for God, bringing back a Soul to him, thou ſhouldſt not purſue it with more earneſtneſs than while thou wert an agent of Satan's; beſides, the remembrance that thou wert a means of bringing this poor Soul into this ſnare, muſt neceſſarily quicken thy diligence to get him out of it. So much for the firſt part of negative Juſtice, in reſpect of the Souls of our brethren.

12. The ſecond concerns the bodies, and to thoſe alſo this juſtice binds thee to do no wrong nor violence. Now of wrongs to the body there may be ſeveral degrees, the higheſt of them is killing, taking away the life; this is forbid in the very letter of the ſixth Commandment; *Thou ſhalt do no murder.*

Negative Juſtice to the body.

In reſpect of the life.

13. Murder may be committed either by open violence; when a man either by ſword, or any other Inſtrument takes away anothers life, immediately and directly, or it may be done ſecretly and treacherouſly, as *David* murdered *Uriah*, not with his own ſword, but with the ſword of the Children of *Ammon*, 2 *Sam.* 11.

Several ways of being guilty of Murder.

17.

17. And *Jezebel Naboth* by a falſe accuſation, 1 *Kings* 21. 13. And ſo divers have committed this ſin of murther by poyſon, falſe-witneſs, or ſome ſuch concealed ways. The former is commonly the effect of a ſudden rage, the latter hath ſeveral originals; ſometimes it proceeds from ſome old malice fixt in the heart towards the perſon; ſometimes from ſome covetous or ambitious deſires; ſuch an one ſtands in a Man's way to his profit or preferment, and therefore he muſt be removed; and ſometimes again it is to cover ſhame, as in the caſe of Strumpets, that murther their Infants that they may not betray their filthineſs. But beſides theſe more direct ways of killing, there is another, and that is, when by our perſwaſions and enticements we draw a Man to do that which tends to the ſhortning of his life, and is apparent to do ſo; he that makes his neighbour drunk, if by that drunkenneſs the Man comes to any mortal hurt, which he would have eſcaped if he had been ſober, he that made him drunk is not clear of his death; or if he die not by any ſuch ſudden accident, yet if drinking caſt him into a diſeaſe, and that diſeaſe kill him, I know not how he that drew him to that exceſs can accquit himſelf of his murder in the eyes of God, though humane Laws touch him not. I wiſh thoſe who make it their buſineſs to draw in cuſtomers to that trade of debauchery, would conſider it. There is yet another way of bringing this guilt upon our ſelves; and that is by inciting and ſtirring up others to it, or to that degree of anger and revenge which produces it; and he that ſets two perſons at vari-

ance,

ance, or ſeeing them already ſo, blows the coals, if murder enſue, he certainly hath his ſhare in the guilt, which is a conſideration that ought to affright all from having any thing to do in the kindling or increaſing of contention.

14. Now for the hainouſneſs of this ſin of Murther, I ſuppoſe none can be ignorant, that it is of the deepeſt die, a moſt loud crying ſin. This we may ſee in the firſt act of this kind, that ever was committed, *Abel*'s bloud crieth from the earth, as God tells *Cain*, *Gen.* 4. 10. Yea, the guilt of this ſin is ſuch, that it leaves a ſtain even upon the Land where it is committed, ſuch as is not to be waſhed out, but by the bloud of the murtherer; as appears, *Deut.* 19. 12, 13. The Land cannot be purged of bloud, but by the bloud of him that ſhed it; and therefore though in other caſes the flying to the Altar ſecured a Man, yet in this of wilful murder no ſuch refuge was allowed, but ſuch a one was to be taken even thence, and delivered up to juſtice, *Exod.* 21.14. *Thou ſhalt take him from my Altar that he may die.* And it is yet farther obſervable, that the only two Precepts which the Scripture mentions, as given to *Noah* after the flood, were both in relation to this ſin; that of not eating bloud, *Gen.* 9. 4. being a ceremony, to beget in Men a greater horror of this ſin of murther, and ſo intended for the preventing of it. The other was for the puniſhment of it, *Gen.* 9. 6. *He that ſheddeth man's bloud, by man ſhall his bloud be ſhed*; and the reaſon of this ſtrictneſs is added in the next words, *For in the image of*

The hainouſneſs of the ſin.

of God made he man; where you ſee that this ſin is not only an injury to our brother, but even the higheſt contempt and deſpite towards God himſelf, for it is the defacing of his image, which he hath ſtamped upon Man. Nay yet further, it is the uſurping of God's proper right, and authority. For it is God alone, that hath right to diſpoſe of the life of Man; 'twas he alone that gave it, and it is he alone that hath power to take it away; but he that murders a man, does as it were, wreſt this power out of God's hand, which is the higheſt pitch of rebellious preſumption.

The great puniſhment attending it.

15. And as the ſin is great, ſo likewiſe is the puniſhment; we ſee it frequently very great and remarkable even in this world, (beſides thoſe moſt fearful effects of it in the next) bloud not only cries, but it cries for vengeance, and the great God of recompences, as he ſtiles himſelf, will not fail to hear it: very many examples the Scripture gives us of this: *Ahab* and *Jezebel*, that murthered innocent *Naboth*, for greedineſs of his Vineyard, were themſelves ſlain, and the Dogs licked their bloud in the place where they had ſhed his, as you may read in that Story; ſo *Abſalom* that ſlew his brother *Ammon*, after he had committed that ſin, fell into another, that of rebellion againſt his King and Father, and in it miſerably periſhed. *Rachab* and *Baanah*, that ſlew *Iſhboſheth*, were themſelves put to death, and that by the very perſon they thought to endear by it. Many more inſtances might be given of this out of

of the Sacred Story, and many alſo out of Humane, there having been no age but hath yielded multitudes of examples of this kind, ſo that every man may furniſh himſelf out of the obſervations of his own time.

The ſtrange diſcoveries of it.

16. And it is worth our notice, what ſtrange and even miraculous means it hath often pleaſed God to uſe for the diſcovery of this ſin; the very brute creatures have often been made inſtruments of it; nay, often the extreme horror of a Man's own conſcience hath made him betray himſelf; ſo that it is not any cloſeneſs a Man uſes in the acting of this ſin, that can ſecure him from the vengeance of it, for he can never ſhut out his own conſcience, that will in ſpight of him be privy to the fact, and that very often proves the means of diſcovering it to the world, or if it ſhould not do that, yet it will ſure act revenge on him, it will be ſuch a Hell within him as will be worſe than death: This we have ſeen in many, who after the commiſſion of this ſin have never been able to enjoy a minutes reſt, but have had that intolerable anguiſh of mind, that they have choſen to be their own murderers rather than live in it. Theſe are the uſual effects of this ſin even in this world, but thoſe in another are yet more dreadful, where ſurely the higheſt degrees of torment belong to this high pitch of wickedneſs: for if, as our Saviour tells us, *Matth.* 5. 22. Hell fire be the portion of him that ſhall but call his brother fool, what degree of thoſe burnings can we think proportionable to this ſo much greater an injury?

17. The

We muſt watch diligently againſt all approaches of this ſin.

17. The conſideration of all this ought to poſſeſs us with the greateſt horrour, and abomination of this ſin, and to make us extreamly watchful of our ſelves, that we never fall into it, and to that end to prevent all thoſe occaſions which may inſenſibly draw us into this Pit. I mentioned at firſt ſeveral things which are wont to be originals of it, and at thoſe we muſt begin, if we will ſurely guard our ſelves. If therefore thou wilt be ſure never to kill a man in thy rage, be ſure never to be in that rage, for if thou permitteſt thy ſelf to that, thou canſt have no ſecurity againſt the other, anger being a madneſs that ſuffers us not to conſider, or know what we do, when it has once poſſeſt us. Therefore when thou findeſt thy ſelf begin to be inflamed, think betimes whither this may lead thee, if thou letteſt looſe to it, and immediately put the bridle upon this head-ſtrong paſſion; ſo again, if thou wilt be ſure thy malice ſhall not draw thee to it, be ſure never to harbour one malicious thought in thy heart, for if it once ſettle there, it will gather ſuch ſtrength, that within a while thou wilt be perfectly under the power of it, ſo that it may lead thee even to this horrible ſin at its pleaſure; be therefore careful at the very firſt approach of this treacherous gueſt, to ſhut the doors againſt it, never to let it enter thy mind; ſo alſo if thou wilt be ſure thy covetouſneſs, thy ambition, thy luſt, or any other ſinful deſire ſhall not betray thee to it, be ſure thou never permit

permit any of them to bear any ſway with thee, for if they get the dominion, as they will ſoon do, if they be once entertained in the heart, they will be paſt thy controul, and hurry thee to this or any other ſin, that may ſerve their ends. In like manner, if thou wouldſt not be guilty of any of the mortal effects of thy neighbour's drunkenneſs, be ſure not to entice him to it, nor accompany him at it, and to that purpoſe do not allow thy ſelf in the ſame practice, for if thou do, thou wilt be labouring to get company at it. Laſtly, if thou wilt not be guilty of the murder committed by another, take heed thou never give any incouragement to it, or contribute any thing to that hatred, or contention, that may be the cauſe of it. For when thou haſt either kindled or blowed the fire, what knoweſt thou whom it may conſume? Bring alway as much water as thou canſt to quench, but never bring one drop of Oil to encreaſe the flame. The like may be ſaid of all other occaſions of this ſin not here mentioned; and this careful preſerving our ſelves from theſe, is the only ſure way to keep us from this ſin: therefore as ever thou wouldſt keep thy ſelf innocent from the great offence, guard thee warily from all ſuch in-lets, thoſe ſteps and approaches towards it.

Maiming a great injury.

18. But although murder be the greateſt, yet it is not the only injury that may be done to the body of our neighbour; there are others which are alſo of a very high nature; the next in degree to this is maiming him, depriving

priving him of any member, or at leaſt of the uſe of it, and this is a very great wrong and miſchief to him, as we may diſcern by the judgment of God himſelf, in the caſe of the bond-ſervant, who ſhould by his Maſter's means loſe a member, *Exod.* 21. 26. the freedom of his whole life was thought but a reaſonable recompence for it. *He ſhall let him go free*, ſaith the text, *for his eye*; nay, though it were a leſs conſiderable part, if it were but a tooth, which of all others may be loſt with the leaſt damage, yet the ſame amends was to be made him, verſ. 27.

That which every man dreads for himſelf.

19. But we need no other way of meaſuring this injury, than the judgment of every man in his own caſe; how much does every man dread the loſs of a limb? So that if he be by any accident or diſeaſe, in danger of it, he thinks no pains or coſt too much to preſerve it. And then how great an injuſtice, how contrary to that great rule of *doing as we would be done to*, is it for a Man to do that to another, which he ſo unwillingly ſuffers himſelf?

Yet worſe if the man be poor.

But if the perſon be poor, one that muſt labour for his living, the injury is yet greater, it is ſuch as may in effect amount to the former ſin of murder; for as the Wiſe man ſays, *Eccluſ.* 24. 21. *The poor mans bread is his life, & he that deprives him thereof is a bloodſhedder.* And therefore he that deprives him of the means of getting his bread, by diſabling him from labour, is ſure no leſs guilty. In the Law it was permit-

ted

ted to every man that had ſuſtained ſuch a damage by his neighbour, to require the Magiſtrate to inflict the like on him, *eye for eye, tooth for tooth*, as it is, *Exod.* 21. 24.

Neceſſity of making what ſatisfaction we can.

20. And though unprofitable revenge be not now allowed to us Chriſtians, yet ſure it is the part of every one who hath done this injury, to make what ſatisfaction lies in his power; 'tis true he cannot reſtore a limb again (which by the way ſhould make Men wary how they do thoſe miſchiefs which it is ſo impoſſible for them to repair) but yet he may ſatisfie for ſome of the ill effects of that loſs. If that have brought the Man to want and penury, he may, nay he muſt, if he have but the leaſt ability, relieve and ſupport him, yea, though it be by his own extraordinary labour: for if it be a duty of us all to be eyes to the blind, and feet to the lame, as *Job* ſpeaks, much more muſt we be ſo to them whom our ſelves have made blind and lame. Therefore whoever hath done this injury to any of his poor brethren, let him know he is bound to do all that is poſſible towards the repairing of it; if he do not, every new ſuffering that the poor mans wants bring upon him, becomes a new charge and accuſation againſt him, at the tribunal of the juſt Judge.

Wounds and ſtripes injuries alſo.

21. There are yet other degrees of injury to the body of our neighbour. I ſhall mention only two more, Wounds and Stripes; a Man may wound another,

which

which though it finally cauſe loſs neither of life nor limb, is yet an endangering of both; and the like may be ſaid of ſtripes; both of which however are very painful at the preſent, nay, perhaps very long after; and pain, of all temporal evils, is to be accounted the greateſt, for it is not only an evil in it ſelf, but it is ſuch an one, that permits us not, whileſt we are under it, to enjoy any other good: a Man in pain having no taſte of any the greateſt delights; If any Man deſpiſe theſe, as light injuries, let him again ask himſelf, how he would like it, to have his own body ſlaſht or bruiſed, and put to paſs under thoſe painful means of cure, which are many times neceſſary in ſuch caſes? I preſume there is no Man would willingly undergo this from another, and why then ſhouldeſt thou offer it to him?

This cruelty to others the effect of pride.

22. The truth is, this ſtrange cruelty to others is the effect of a great pride, and haughtineſs of heart: we look upon others with ſuch contempt, that we think it no matter how they are uſed; we think they muſt bear blows from us, when in the mean time we are ſo tender of our ſelves, that we cannot hear the leaſt word of diſparagement, but we are all on a flame. The provocations to theſe injuries are commonly ſo ſlight, that did not this inward pride diſpoſe us to ſuch an angrineſs of humour, that we take fire at every thing, it were impoſſible we ſhould be moved by them. Nay, ſome are advanced to ſuch a wantonneſs of cruelty, that without any provocation

vocation at all, in cool bloud, as they ſay, they can thus wrong their poor brethren, and make it part of their paſtime and recreation to cauſe pain to others. Thus ſome tyrannous humours take ſuch a pleaſure in tormenting thoſe under their power, that they are glad when they can but find a pretence to puniſh them, and then do it without all moderation: and others will ſet men together by the ears, only that they may have the ſport of ſeeing the ſcuffle; like the old *Romans*, that made it one of their publick Sports to ſee Men kill one another; and ſure we have as little Chriſtianity as they, if we can take delight in ſuch ſpectacles.

23. This ſavageneſs and cruelty of mind is ſo unbecoming the nature of a Man, that he is not allowed to uſe it even to his Beaſt; how intolerable is it then towards thoſe, that are of the ſame nature, and which is more, are heirs of the ſame eternal hopes with us? They that ſhall thus tranſgreſs againſt their neighbours in any of the foregoing particulars, or whatever elſe is hurtful to the body, are unjuſt perſons, want even this loweſt ſort of juſtice, the negative to their neighbours in reſpect of their bodies.

24. Neither can any Man excuſe himſelf by ſaying what he has done was only in return of ſome injury offered him by the other; for ſuppoſe it be ſo, that he have indeed received ſome conſiderable wrong, yet cannot he be his own revenger without injury to that Man, who is not, by being thine enemy, become thy vaſſal, or ſlave, to do with him what thou liſt; thou haſt never the more right of dominion over him,

becauſe he hath done thee wrong, and therefore if thou hadſt no power over his body before, 'tis certain thou haſt none now, and therefore thou art not only uncharitable (which yet were ſin enough to damn thee) but unjuſt in every act of violence thou doſt to him. Nay, this injuſtice aſcends higher, even to God himſelf, who hath reſerved vengeance as his own peculiar right, *Vengeance is mine, I will repay, ſaith the Lord, Rom.* 12. 19. and then he that will act revenge for himſelf, what does he, but incroach upon the ſpecial right and prerogative of God, ſnatch the ſword, as it were out of his hand, as if he knew better how to wield it? Which is at once a robbery and contempt of the Divine Majeſty.

SUNDAY XI.

Of Juſtice about the Poſſeſſions of our Neighbour; againſt injuring him, as concerning his Wife, his Goods. Of Oppreſſion, Theft. Of paying of Debts, &c.

His Poſſeſſions.

Sect. 1. THE third part of Negative Juſtice concerns the Poſſeſſions of our Neighbours; what I mean by Poſſeſſions, I cannot better explain than by referring you to the

the Tenth Commandment, the end of which is to bridle all covetous appetites and deſires towards the poſſeſſions of our neighbour. There we find reckoned up, not only his houſe, ſervants and cattel, which may all paſs under the one general name of his goods or riches, but particularly his Wife, as a principal part of his poſſeſſions, and therefore when we conſider this duty of negative juſtice, in reſpect of the poſſeſſions of our neighbour, we muſt apply it to both, his wife as well as his goods.

His Wife.

2. The eſpecial and peculiar right that every Man hath in his Wife is ſo well known, that it were vain to ſay any thing in proof of it; the great impatience that every husband hath to have this right of his invaded, ſhews that it is ſufficiently underſtood in the World, and therefore none that does this injury to another, can be ignorant of the greatneſs of it. The corrupting of a Man's Wife, enticing her to a ſtrange bed, is by all acknowledged to be the worſt ſort of theft, infinitely beyond that of the goods.

The enticing a man's wife the greateſt injuſtice.

3. Indeed there is in this one, a heap of the greateſt injuſtices together, ſome towards the Woman, and ſome towards the Man: towards the Woman there are the greateſt imaginable; it is that injuſtice to her ſoul, which was before mentioned as the higheſt of all others, 'tis the robbing her of her innocency, and ſetting her in a courſe of the horridſt wicked-

To the Woman.

neſs (no leſs than luſt and perjury together) from which it is probable ſhe may never return, and then it proves the damning of her eternally. Next it is in reſpect of this World the robbing her of her credit, making her abhorred and deſpiſed, and her very name a reproach among all Men; and beſides, it is the depriving her of all that happineſs of life, which ariſes from the mutual kindneſs and affection that is between Man and Wife. Inſtead whereof this brings in a loathing and abhorring of each other, from whence flow multitudes of miſchiefs, too many to rehearſe, in all which the Man hath his ſhare alſo.

To the man.

4. But beſides thoſe, there are to him many and high injuſtices; for it is firſt the robbing him of that, which of all other things he accounts moſt precious, the love and faithfulneſs of his Wife, and that alſo wherein he hath ſuch an incommunicable right, that himſelf cannot, if he would, make it over to any other; and therefore ſure it cannot without the utmoſt injuſtice be torn from him by any. Nor is this all, but it is farther the ingulfing him (if ever he come to diſcern it) in that moſt tormenting paſſion of jealouſie, which is of all others the moſt painful, and which oft puts Men upon the moſt deſperate attempts, it being as *Solomon* ſays. *Prov.* 6. 34. *The rage of a man.* It is yet farther, the bringing upon him all that ſcorn and contempt which by the unjuſt meaſures of the World falls on them, which are ſo abuſed, and which is by many eſteemed the moſt inſufferable part of the wrong; and though it be true, that it is very unjuſt he ſhould fall under

under reproach, only, becauſe he is injured, yet unleſs the World could be new moulded, it will certainly be his lot, and therefore it adds much to the injury. Again, this may indeed be a robbery in the uſual ſence of the word, for perhaps it may be the thruſting in the child of the Adulterer into his family, to ſhare both in the maintenance and portions of his own children; and this is an arrand theft, firſt, in reſpect of the man, who ſurely intends not the providing for another Man's child; and then in reſpect of the children, who are by that means defrauded of ſo much as that goes away with. And therefore whoſoever hath this circumſtance of the ſin to repent of, cannot do it effectually, without reſtoring to the family, as much as he hath by this means robb'd it of.

The moſt irreparable.

5. All this put together will ſure make this the greateſt and moſt provoking injury that can be done to a man, and (which heightens it yet more) it is that for which a Man can never make reparations; for unleſs it be in the circumſtance before mentioned, there is no part of this ſin, wherein that can be done; to this purpoſe it is obſervable in the Jewiſh Law, that the Thief was appointed to reſtore fourfold, and that freed him; but the Adulterer having no poſſibility of making any reſtitution, any ſatisfaction, he muſt pay his life for his offence, *Lev.* 20. 10. And though now adays adulterers ſpeed better, live many days to renew their guilt, and perhaps to laugh at thoſe, whom they have thus injured, yet let them be

assured, there must one day be a sad reckoning, and that whether they repent or not; If by God's grace they do come to repentance, they will then find this to be no cheap sin, many anguishes of soul, terrors and perplexities of conscience, groans and tears it must cost them; and indeed were a man's whole life spent in these penitential exercises, 'twere little enough to wipe off the guilt of any one single act of this kind; what overwhelming sorrows then are requisite for such a trade of this sin, as too many drive? Certainly it is so great a task, that it is highly necessary for all that are so concerned, to set to it immediately, lest they want time to go through with it; for let no man flatter himself, that the guilt of a course and habit of such a sin can be washt away with a single act of repentance, no, he must proportion the repentance to the fault, and as one hath been a habit and course, so must the other also. And then how strange a madness is it for Men to run into this sin, (and that with such painful pursuits, as many do) which he knows must at the best hand, that is, supposing he do repent of it, cost him thus dear? But then if he do not repent infinitely dearer? it loses him all his title to Heaven, that place of purity, and gives him his portion in the lake of fire, where the burnings of his lust shall end in those everlasting burnings; For how closely soever he hath acted this sin, be it so that he may have said with the adulterer in *Job* 25. 15. *No eye seeth me*, yet 'tis sure he could not in the greatest obscurity shelter himself from God's sight, with whom *the darkness is no darkness*;

Psalm

Pſalm 139. 12. And he it is, who hath expreſly threatned to judge this ſort of offenders, *Heb.* 13. 4. *Adulterers God will judge.* God grant that all that live in this foul guilt, may ſo ſeaſonably, and ſo throughly judge themſelves, that they may prevent that ſevere and dreadful judgment of his.

His goods.

6. The ſecond thing to which this Negative juſtice to our Neighbours poſſeſſions reacheth, is his Goods, under which general word is contained all thoſe ſeveral ſorts of things, as Houſe, Land, Cattle, Money, and the like, in which he hath a right and property; theſe we are by the rule of this juſtice to ſuffer him to enjoy without ſeeking, either to work him damage in any of them, or to get any of them to our ſelves: I make a difference between theſe two, becauſe there may be two ſeveral grounds or motives of this injuſtice; the one malice, the other covetouſneſs.

Malicious injuſtice.

7. The malicious Man deſires to work his Neighbours miſchief, though he get nothing by it himſelf: 'tis frequently ſeen that Men will make havock and ſpoil of the goods of one, to whom they bear a grudge, though they never deſign to get any thing to themſelves by it, but only the pleaſure of doing a ſpight to the other. This is a moſt helliſh humour, directly anſwerable to that of the Devil, who beſtows all his pains and induſtry, not to bring in any good to himſelf, but only to ruine and undo others; and how contrary it is to all rules of juſtice, you

may ſee by the Precept given by God to the Jews concerning the goods of an enemy; where they were ſo far from being allowed a liberty of ſpoil and deſtruction, that they are expreſly bound to prevent it, *Exod.* 23. 4,5. *If thou meet thine enemies Oxe, or his Aſs going a-ſtray, thou ſhalt ſurely bring it back to him again: If thou ſee the Aſs of him that hateth thee lying under his burden, and wouldſt forbear to help him, thou ſhalt ſurely help with him:* Where you ſee it is a debt we owe to our very enemies, to prevent that loſs and damage, which by any accident he is in danger of: and that even with ſome labour, and pains to our ſelves. How horrible an injuſtice is it then purpoſely to bring that loſs and damage on him? Whoever is guilty of this, let him never excuſe himſelf by ſaying, he hath not enricht himſelf by the ſpoil of his neighbour, that he hath nothing of it cleaves to his finger, for ſure this malicious injuſtice is no leſs a fault than the covetous one; nay, I ſuppoſe in reſpect of the principle and cauſe, from which it flows, it may be greater, this hatred of another being worſe than the immoderate love of our ſelves; whoever hath thus miſchieft his neighbour, he is as much bound to repair the injury, to make ſatisfaction for the loſs, as if he had enriched himſelf by it.

Covetous injuſtice.

8. But on the other ſide, let not the covetous defrauder therefore judge his ſin light, becauſe there is another, that in ſome one reſpect out-weighs it, for perhaps in others his may caſt the ſcales; certainly it does in this one, that he

he that is unjuſt for greedineſs of gain, is like to multiply more acts of this ſin, than he that is ſo out of malice; for 'tis impoſſible any Man ſhould have ſo many objects of his malice, as he may have of his covetouſneſs; there is no Man at ſo general a defiance with all Mankind that he hates every body; but the covetous Man hath as many objects of his vice, as there be things in the World he counts valuable. But I ſhall not longer ſtand upon this compariſon, 'tis ſure they are both great and crying ſins, and that is ground enough of abhorring each, let us deſcend now to the ſeveral branches of this ſort of covetous injuſtice; 'tis true they may all bear the name of robbery, or theft, for in effect they are all ſo, yet for methods ſake it will not be amiſs to diſtinguiſh them into theſe three; Oppreſſion, Theft, and Deceit.

9. By Oppreſſion, I mean that open and bare-faced robbery of ſeizing upon the poſſeſſions of others, and owning and avowing the doing ſo. For the doing of this there are ſeveral inſtruments; as firſt, that of power, by which many Nations and Princes have been turned out of their rights, and many private Men out of their eſtates: Sometimes again, Law is made the inſtrument of it; he that covets his Neighbours Lands or Goods, pretends a claim to them, and then by corrupting of Juſtice, by Bribes and Gifts, or elſe over-ruling it by greatneſs and authority, gets Judgment on his ſide: this is a high oppreſſion, and of the worſt ſort, thus to make the Law, which was intended for the protection *Oppreſſion.*

and defence of men's Rights, to be the means of overthrowing them; and it is a very heavy guilt, that lies both on him that procures, and on him that pronounces such a sentence, yea, and on the Lawyer too, that pleads such a cause, for by so doing he assists in the oppression. Sometimes again, the very necessities of the oppressed are the means of his oppression; thus it is in the case of Extortion, and griping Usury: a Man is in extreme want of Money, and this gives opportunity to the Extortioner to wrest unconscionably from him, to which the poor man is forced to yield, to supply his present wants. And thus also it is often with exacting Landlords, who, when their poor Tenants know not how to provide themselves elsewhere, rack and skrew them beyond the worth of the thing. All these and many the like are but several ways of acting this one sin of Oppression, which becomes yet the more hainous, by how much the more helpless the person is that is thus oppressed, therefore the oppression of the Widow and Fatherless, is in Scripture mentioned as the height of this sin.

God's vengeance against it.

10. It is indeed a most crying guilt, and that against which God hath threatned his heavy vengeance, as we read in divers Texts of Scripture; thus it is, *Ezek.* 18. 12. *He that hath oppressed the poor*, and hath spoiled by violence, he shall surely dye; *his blood shall be upon him*; and the same sentence is repeated against him, *verse* 18. Indeed God hath so peculiarly taken upon him the protection of

of the poor and oppreſſed, that he is engaged as it were in honour to be their avenger, and accordingly *Pſalm* 12. we ſee God ſolemnly declare his reſolution of appearing for them, Verſe 5. *For the oppreſſion of the poor, for the ſighing of the needy, now will I ariſe ſaith the Lord, I will ſet him in ſafety from him.* The advice therefore of *Solomon* is excellent, *Prov.* 22. 22. *Rob not the poor, becauſe he is poor; neither oppreſs the afflicted in the gate, for the Lord will plead their cauſe, and will ſpoil the ſoul of thoſe that ſpoiled them*; they are like in the end to have little joy of the booty it brings them in, when it thus engages God againſt them.

11. The ſecond ſort of this injuſtice is Theft, and of that alſo there are two kinds, the one the withholding what we ſhould pay, and the other taking from our neighbour what is already in his poſſeſſion. *Theft.*

12. Of the firſt ſort is the not paying of debts, whether ſuch as we have borrowed, or ſuch as by our own voluntary promiſe are become our debts; for they are equally due to him that can lay either of theſe claims to them; and therefore the withholding of either of them is a theft, a keeping from my neighbour that which is his; yet the former of them is rather the more injurious, for by that I take from him that which he once actually had (be it mony or whatever elſe) and ſo make him worſe than I found him. This is a very great, and very common injuſtice. Men can now adays with as great confidence deny him *Not paying what we borrow.*

that asks a debt, as they do him that asks an alms; nay, many times 'tis made matter of quarrel for a Man to demand his own: beſides the many attendances the Creditor is put to in purſuit of it, are a yet farther injury to him by waſting his time, and taking him off from other buſineſs, and ſo he is made a loſer that way too. This is ſo great injuſtice, that I ſee not how a man can look upon any thing he poſſeſſes as his own right, whileſt he thus denies another his. It is the duty of every Man in debt, rather to ſtrip himſelf of all, and caſt himſelf again naked upon God's providence, than thus to feather his neſt with the ſpoils of his neighbours. And ſurely it would prove the more thriving courſe, not only in reſpect of the bleſſing, which may be expected upon juſtice, compared with the curſe that attends the contrary, but even in worldly prudence alſo; for he that defers paying of debts, will at laſt be forc'd to it by Law, and that upon much worſe terms than he might have done it voluntarily, with a greater charge, and with ſuch a loſs of his credit, that afterward in his greateſt neceſſities he will not know where to borrow. But the ſure way for a Man to ſecure himſelf from the guilt of this injuſtice, is never to borrow more than he knows he hath means to repay, unleſs it be of one, who knowing his diſability, is willing to run the hazard. Otherwiſe he commits this ſin at the very time of borrowing; for he takes that from his neighbour upon promiſe of paying, which he knows he is never likely to reſtore to him, which is a flat robbery.

The

The ſame juſtice which ties Men to pay their own debts, ties alſo every ſurety to pay thoſe debts of others for which he ſtands bound, in caſe the principal either cannot or will not: for by being bound, he hath made it his own debt, and muſt in all juſtice anſwer it to the Creditor, who, it's preſumed, was drawn to lend on confidence of his ſecurity, and therefore is directly cheated and betrayed by him, if he ſee him not ſatisfied. If it be thought hard, that a Man ſhould pay for that which he never received benefit by; I ſhall yield it, ſo far as to be juſt matter of wariness to every Man how he enter into ſuch engagements, but it can never be made an excuſe for the breaking them. *What we are bound for.*

As for the other ſort of debt, that which is brought upon a Man by his own voluntary promiſe, that alſo cannot without great injuſtice be withholden; for it is now the Man's right, and then 'tis no matter, by what means it came to be ſo. Therefore we ſee *David* makes it part of the deſcription of a juſt Man, *Pſalm* 15. 4. that he keeps his promiſes, yea, *though they were made to his own diſadvantage*: and ſurely, he is utterly unfit to aſcend to that holy Hill, there ſpoken of, either as that ſignifies the Church here, or Heaven hereafter, that does not punctually obſerve this part of juſtice. To this ſort of debt may be reduced the wages of the ſervant, the hire of the labourer; and the withholding of theſe is a great ſin, and the complaints of thoſe that are thus injured, aſcend up *What we have promiſed.*

to

to God. *Behold* (ſaith S. *James*) *the hire of the labourers which have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud, crieth, and the cries of them that have reaped, are entred into the ear of the Lord of Sabaoth*, *Deut.* 24. 14, 15. we find a ſtrict command in this matter, *Thou ſhalt not oppreſs a hired ſervant that is poor and needy, at his day thou ſhalt give him his hire, neither ſhall the Sun go down upon it, for he is poor, and ſetteth his heart upon it, leſt he cry againſt thee to the Lord, and it be ſin unto thee.* This is one of thoſe loud clamorous ſins which will not ceaſe crying, till it bring down God's vengeance; and therefore though thou haſt no juſtice to thy poor brother, yet have at leaſt ſo much mercy to thy ſelf, as not to pull down judgments on thee by thus wronging him.

SUNDAY XII.

Of Theft; Stealing; of deceit in Truſt, in Traffick; of Reſtitution, &c.

Stealing the goods of our neighbour.

Sect. 1. THE ſecond part of Theft, is the taking from our Neighbour that which is already in his poſſeſſion: and this may be done either more violently, and openly, or elſe more cloſely and ſliely; the firſt as the manner of thoſe that rob on the way, or plunder

plunder houſes, where by force they take the goods of their neighbour; the other is the way of the pilfering thief, that takes away a Man's goods unknown to him; I ſhall not diſpute, which of theſe is the worſt, 'tis enough that they are both ſuch acts of injuſtice, as make Men odious to God, unfit for humane ſociety, and betray the actors to the greateſt miſchiefs even in this World, death it ſelf being by Law appointed the reward of it; and there are few that follow this trade long, but at laſt meet with that fruit of it. I am ſure 'tis madneſs for any to believe he ſhall always ſteal ſecurely, for he is to contend with the induſtry of all thoſe whom he ſhall thus injure, whoſe loſſes will quicken their wits for the finding him out, and which is infinitely more, he is to ſtruggle with the juſtice of God, which doth uſually purſue ſuch Men to deſtruction, even in this World; witneſs the many ſtrange diſcoveries that have been made of the craftieſt thieves. But however, If he were ſecure from the vengeance here, I am ſure nothing but repentance and reformation can ſecure him from the vengeance of it hereafter. And now when theſe dangers are weighed, 'twill ſure appear, that the thief makes a pitiful bargain, he ſteals his neighbours money or cattle, and in exchange for it he muſt pay his life or his ſoul, perhaps both; and if *the whole world be too mean a price for a ſoul*, as he tells us, *Mark* 8.36. who beſt knew the value of them, having himſelf bought them, what a ſtrange madneſs is it, to barter them away for every petty trifle, as many do, who have got ſuch a habit

habit of ſtealing, that not the meaneſt worthleſs thing can eſcape their fingers? Under this head of Theft may be ranked the receivers of ſtoln goods, whether thoſe that take them, as partners in the theft, or thoſe that buy them, when they know or believe they are ſtoln. This many, (that pretend much to abhor theft) are guilty of, when they can by it buy the thing a little cheaper than the common rate. And here alſo comes in the concealing of any goods a Man finds of his neighbours, which whoſoever reſtores not, if he know, or can learn out the owner, is no better than a thief; for he withholds from his neighbour that which properly belongs to him: and ſure 'twill not be uncharitable to ſay, that he that will do this, would likewiſe commit the groſſer theft, were he by that no more in danger of Law than in this he is.

Deceit. The third part of injuſtice is Deceit, and in that there may be as many acts as there are occaſions of entercourſe and dealing between man and man.

2. It were impoſſible to name them all, but I think they will be contained under theſe two general deceits, in matters of Truſt, and in matters of Traffick, or bargaining; unleſs it be that of Gaming, which therefore here by the way, I muſt tell you, is as much a fraud and deceit as any of the reſt.

In Truſt. 3. He that deceives a Man in any Truſt that is committed to him, is guilty of a great injuſtice, and that the moſt treacherous ſort of one, it is the joyning of two great ſins in one, defrauding, and promiſe-

promiſe-breaking; for in all truſts there is a promiſe implied, if not expreſt; for the very accepting of the truſt contains under it a promiſe of fidelity; theſe truſts are broken ſometimes to the living, ſometimes to the dead; to the living there are many ways of doing it, according to the ſeveral kinds of the truſt; ſometimes a truſt is more general, like that of *Potiphar* to *Joſeph*, *Gen.*39.4. a Man commits to another all that he hath, and thus Guardians of Children, and ſometimes Stewards are intruſted; ſometimes again it is more limited, and reſtrained to ſome one ſpecial thing; a Man intruſts another to bargain or deal for him in ſuch a particular, or he puts ſome one thing into his hands, to manage and diſpoſe: thus among ſervants it is uſual for one to be intruſted with one part of the Maſter's goods, and another with another part of them. Now in all theſe, and the like caſes, whoſoever acts not for him that intruſts him, with the ſame faithfulneſs, that he would for himſelf, but ſhall either careleſly loſe, or prodigally embezle the things committed to him, or elſe convert them to his own uſe, he is guilty of this great ſin of betraying a truſt to the living. In like manner he that being intruſted with the execution of a dead Man's Teſtament, acts not according to the known intention of the dead man, but enriches himſelf by what is aſſigned to others, he is guilty of this ſin, in reſpect of the dead, which is ſo much the greater, by how much the dead hath no means of remedy and redreſs, as the living may have. It is a kind of robbing of graves, which is a theft of which men natu-

naturally have ſuch a horrour, that he muſt be a very hardned Thief, that can attempt it. But either of theſe frauds are made yet more hainous, when either God, or the poor are immediately concern'd in it, that is, when any thing is committed to a Man for the uſes either of piety, or charity; this adds ſacriledge to both the fraud and the treachery, and ſo gives him title to all thoſe curſes that attend thoſe ſeveral ſins, which are ſo heavy, that he that for the preſent gain will adventure on them, makes as ill, nay, a much worſe bargain than *Gehazi*, 2 Kings 5. 27. who *by getting the raiment of* Naaman, *got his leproſie too.*

In Traffick.

4. The ſecond ſort of fraud is in matters of traffick and bargain, wherein there may be deceit both in the ſeller and buyer; that of the ſeller is commonly either in concealing the faults of the commodity, or elſe in over-rating it.

The ſellers concealing the faults of his ware.

5. The ways of concealing its faults are ordinarily theſe, either firſt by denying that it hath any ſuch fault, nay, perhaps commending it for the direct contrary quality, and this is down-right lying, and ſo adds that ſin to the other, and if that lye be confirmed by an oath, as it is too uſually, then the yet greater guilt of perjury comes in alſo; and then what a heap of ſins is here gathered together? Abundantly enough to ſink a poor ſoul to deſtruction, and all this only to skrew a little more money out of his neighbour's pocket, and that ſometimes ſo very

very little, that 'tis a Miracle that any Man that thinks he has a Soul, can ſet it at ſo miſerable a contemptible price. A ſecond means of concealing, is by uſing ſome Art to the thing, to make it look fair, and to hide the faults of it, and this is acting a lye, though it be not ſpeaking one, which amounts to the ſame thing, and has ſurely in this caſe as much of the intention of cheating and defrauding, as the moſt impudent forſwearing can have. A third means, is the picking out ignorant Chapmen; This is, I believe, an Art too well known among Tradeſmen, who will not bring out their faulty wares to Men of skill, but keep them to put off to ſuch, whoſe unskilfulneſs may make them paſſable with them: and this is ſtill the ſame deceit with the former; for it all tends to the ſame end, the couzening and defrauding of the Chapman, and then it is not much odds, whether I make uſe of my own Art, or his weakneſs for the purpoſe. This is certain, he that will do juſtly, muſt let his Chapman know what he buys; and if his own skill enable him not to judge, (nay, if he do not actually find out the fault) thou art bound to tell it him, otherwiſe thou makeſt him pay for ſomewhat which is not there, he preſuming there is that good quality in it, which thou knoweſt is not; and therefore thou mayeſt as honeſtly take his Money for ſome goods of another man's, which thou knoweſt thou canſt never put into his poſſeſſion, which I ſuppoſe no Man will deny to be an arrant cheat. To this head of concealment may be referred that deceit of falſe weights and meaſures, for that is the concealing from

from the buyer a defect in the quantity, as the other was in the quality of the commodity, and is again the making him pay for what he hath not. This ſort of fraud is pointed at particularly by *Solomon*, *Prov.* 11. 1. with this note upon it, that *it is an abomination to the Lord.*

His over-rating it.

6. The ſecond part of fraud in the Seller, lies in over-rating the commodity; though he have not diſguiſed, or concealed the faults of it, and ſo have dealt fairly in that reſpect, yet if he ſet an unreaſonable price upon it, he defrauds the buyer: I call that an unreaſonable price, which exceeds the true worth of the thing, conſidered with thoſe moderate gains, which all Tradeſmen are preſumed to be allowed in the Sale: Whatever is beyond this muſt in all likelihood be fetcht in by ſome of theſe ways: As firſt, by taking advantage of the buyers ignorance in the value of the thing, which is the ſame with doing it in the goodneſs, which hath already been ſhewed to be a deceit; or ſecondly, by taking advantage of his neceſſity: Thou findeſt a Man hath preſent and urgent need of ſuch a thing, and therefore takeſt this opportunity to ſet the Dice upon him; but this is that very ſin of Extortion, and Oppreſſion ſpoken of before, for it is ſure, nothing can juſtly raiſe the price of any thing, but either its becoming dearer to thee, or its being ſome way better in it ſelf; but the neceſſity of thy brother cauſes neither of theſe, his nakedneſs doth not make the cloaths thou ſelleſt him ſtand thee in ever the more, neither doth it make them any way better;

ter; and therefore to rate them ever the higher is to change the way of trading, and ſell even the wants and neceſſities of thy Neighbour, which ſure is a very unlawful vocation. Or thirdly, it may be by taking advantage of the indiſcretion of the Chapman. A man perhaps earneſtly fanſies ſuch a thing; and then ſuffers that fancy ſo to over-rule his reaſon, that he reſolves to have it upon any terms. If thou findeſt this in him, and thereupon raiſeſt thy rate, this is to make him buy his folly, which is of all others the deareſt purchace; 'tis ſure his fancy adds nothing to the real value, no more than his neceſſity did in the former caſe, and therefore ſhould not add to the price. He therefore that will deal juſtly in the buſineſs of ſelling muſt not catch at all advantages, which the temper of his Chapman may give, but conſider ſoberly, what the thing is worth, and what he would afford it for to another, of whom he had no ſuch advantage, and accordingly rate it to him at no higher a price.

7. On the Buyers part there are not ordinarily ſo many opportunities of Fraud; yet it is poſſible a Man may ſometimes happen to ſell ſomewhat, the worth whereof he is not acquainted with, and then it will be as unjuſt for the buyer to make gain by his ignorance, as in the other caſe it was for the ſeller; but that which often falls out, is the caſe of neceſſity, which may as probably fall on the ſellers ſide, as the buyers: A man's wants compel him to ſell, and permit him not to ſtay to make the beſt bargain, *Fraud in the Buyer.*

bargain, but force him to take the firſt offer, and here for the buyer to grate upon him, becauſe he ſees him in that ſtrait, is the ſame fault which I before ſhewed it to be in the feller.

Many temptations to deceit in Traffick.

8. In this whole buſineſs of Traffick there are ſo many opportunities of deceit, that a Man had need fence himſelf with a very firm reſolution, nay, love of juſtice, or he will be in danger to fall under temptation; for as the Wiſe man ſpeaks, *Eccluſ.* 27. 2. *As a nail ſticks faſt between the joynings of the Stones*, ſo doth ſin ſtick cloſe between buying and ſelling; it is ſo interwoven with all Trades, ſo mixt with the very firſt principles and grounds of them, that it is taught together with them, and ſo becomes part of the Art; ſo that he is now adays ſcarce thought fit to manage a Trade, that wants it, while he that hath moſt of this black Art of defrauding, applauds and hugs himſelf, nay, perhaps, boaſts to others, how he hath over-reacht his Neighbour.

The commonneſs of injuſtice a reproach to Chriſtianity.

What an intolerable ſhame is this, that we Chriſtians, who are by the precepts of our Maſter ſet to thoſe higher duties of Charity, ſhould inſtead of practiſing them, quite unlearn thoſe common rules of juſtice, which meer nature teaches? For, I think, I may ſay, there are none of thoſe ſeveral branches of injuſtice towards the poſſeſſions of our Neighbour, which would not be adjudged to be ſo by any ſober

ſober Heathen; ſo that, as *S. Paul* tells thoſe of the Circumciſion, that the name of God *was blaſphemed among the Gentiles*, by that unagreeableneſs that was betwixt their practice, and their Law, *Rom.* 2. 24. ſo now may it be ſaid of us, that the *Name of Chriſt is blaſphemed among the Turks and Heathens*, by the vile and ſcandalous lives of us who call our ſelves Chriſtians, and particularly in this ſin of injuſtice; for ſhame let us at laſt endeavour to wipe off this reproach from our profeſſion, by leaving theſe practices; to which methinks this one ſingle conſideration ſhould be enough to perſwade us.

It is not the way to enrich a man.

9. Yet beſides this, there want not other; among which, one there is of ſuch a nature, as may prevail with the arranteſt worldling, and that is, that this courſe doth not really tend to the enriching of him; there is a ſecret curſe goes along with it, which like a Canker, eats out all the benefit was expected from it. This no man can doubt that believes the Scripture, where there are multitudes of Texts to this purpoſe: thus *Prov.* 22. 16. *He that oppreſſeth the poor to encreaſe his riches, ſhall ſurely come to want.* So Habbak. 2. 6. *Wo to him that encreaſeth that which is not his! how long? And he that ladeth himſelf with thick Clay: ſhall they not riſe up ſuddenly that ſhall bite thee; and awake that ſhall vex thee? And thou ſhalt be for booties to them.* This is commonly the fortune of thoſe that ſpoil and deceive others, they at laſt meet with ſome that do the like to them. But the place in *Zachary* is moſt full to this purpoſe,

Chap.

Chap. 5. where under the ſign of a flying roll is ſignified the curſe that goes forth againſt this ſin, Verſe 4. *I will bring it forth, ſaith the Lord of Hoſts, and it ſhall enter into the houſe of the Thief, and into the houſe of him that ſweareth falſly by my Name, and it ſhall conſume it with the timber thereof, and with the ſtones thereof.* Where you ſee, theft and perjury are the two ſins, againſt which this curſe is aimed (and they too often go together in the matter of defrauding) and the nature of this curſe is, to conſume the houſe, to make an utter deſtruction of all that belongs to him that is guilty of either of theſe ſins. Thus whileſt thou art ravening after thy neighbours goods, or houſe, thou art but gathering fuel to burn thine own. And the effect of theſe threatnings of God we daily ſee in the ſtrange improſperouſneſs of ill gotten eſtates, which every Man is apt enough to obſerve in other Mens caſes: he that ſees his neighbour decline in his eſtate, can preſently call to mind, This was gotten by oppreſſion or deceit; yet ſo ſottiſh are we, ſo bewitcht with the love of gain, that he that makes this obſervation, can ſeldom turn it to his own uſe, is nevertheleſs greedy, or unjuſt himſelf for that vengeance he diſcerns upon others.

It ruines the Soul eternally.

10. But alas! if thou couldeſt be ſure that thy unjuſt poſſeſſions ſhould not be torn from thee, yet when thou remembreſt, how dear thou muſt pay for them in another World, thou haſt little reaſon to brag of thy prize. Thou thinkeſt thou haſt been very cunning, when thou haſt over-reacht thy brother;

ther; But God knows all the while there is another over-reaching thee, and cheating thee of what is infinitely more precious, even thy Soul; the Devil herein deals with thee as Fiſhers uſe to do; thoſe that will catch a great fiſh, will bait the hook with a leſs, and ſo the great one coming with greedineſs to devour that, is himſelf taken? So thou that art gaping to ſwallow up thy poor brother, art thy ſelf made a prey to that great devourer. And alas! what will it eaſe thee in Hell that thou haſt left wealth behind thee upon Earth, when thou ſhalt there want that, which the meaneſt beggar here enjoys, even a drop of water to cool thy tongue? Conſider this, and from henceforth reſolve to imploy all that pains and diligence thou haſt uſed to deceive others, in reſcuing thy ſelf from the frauds of the grand deceiver.

The neceſſity of reſtitution.

11. To this purpoſe it is abſolutely neceſſary, that thou make Reſtitution to all whom thou haſt wronged: For as long as thou keepeſt any thing of the unjuſt gain, 'tis as it were an earneſt-penny from the Devil which gives him full right to thy Soul. But perhaps it may be ſaid, It will not in all caſes be poſſible to make reſtitution to the wronged party, peradventure he may be dead; in that caſe then make it to his Heirs, to whom his right deſcends. But it may further be objected, that he that hath long gone on in a courſe of fraud, may have injured many, that he cannot now remember, and many, that he hath no means of finding out; in this caſe all I can ad-

vi-

viſe is this: Firſt, to be as diligent as is poſſible both in recalling to mind who they were, and endeavouring to find them out: and when, after all thy care, that proves impoſſible, let thy Reſtitutions be made to the poor: and that they may not be made by halves, be as careful as thou canſt to reckon every the leaſt mite of unjuſt gain: but when that cannot exactly be done, as 'tis ſure it cannot by thoſe who have multiplied the Acts of fraud, yet even there let them make ſome general meaſures, whereby to proportion their reſtitution: As for example, a Tradeſman that cannot remember how much he hath cheated in every ſingle parcel, yet may poſſibly gueſs in the groſs whether he have uſually over-reacht to the value of a third, or a fourth part of the wares, and then what proportion ſoever he thinks he has ſo defrauded, the ſame proportion let him now give out of that eſtate he hath raiſed by his Trade: but herein it concerns every Man to deal uprightly, as in the preſence of God, and not to make advantage of his own forgetfulneſs, to the cutting ſhort of the Reſtitution, but rather go on the other hand, and be ſure rather to give too much, than too little. If he do happen to give ſomewhat over, he need not grudge the charge of ſuch a ſin-offering, and 'tis ſure he will not, if he do heartily deſire an atonement. Many other difficulties there may be in this buſineſs of reſtitution, which will not be foreſeen, and ſo cannot now be particularly ſpoke to; but the more of thoſe there are, the greater horror ought Men to have of running into the ſin of injuſtice, which it will be ſo difficult,

cult, if not impossible for them to repair, and the more careful ought they to be to mortifie that which is the root of all injustice, to wit, Covetousness.

SUNDAY XIII.

Of false Reports, False-witness, Slanders, Whispering; Of scoffing for Infirmities, Calamities, Sins, &c. Of Positive Justice, Truth. Of Lying. Of Envy and Detraction. Of Gratitude, &c.

Sect. 1. THE fourth Branch of Negative Justice concerns the Credit of our Neighbours, which we are not to lessen or impair by any means, particularly not by false Reports. Of false reports there may be two sorts: the one is when a Man says something of his Neighbour, which he directly knows to be false; the other when possibly he has some slight surmise, or jealousie of the thing, but that upon such weak grounds, that 'tis as likely to be false as true. In either of these cases, there is a great guilt lies upon the reporter. That there doth so in the first of them, no body will doubt, every one acknowledging that it is the greatest baseness to invent a lie of another; but there is as little rea-

His Credit.

ſon to queſtion the other, for he that reports a thing as a truth, which is but uncertain, is a liar alſo; or if he do not report it as a certainty, but only as a probability, yet then though he be not guilty of the lye, yet he is of the injuſtice of robbing his neighbour of his credit: for there is ſuch an aptneſs in men to believe ill of others, that any the lighteſt jealouſie will, if once it be ſpread abroad, ſerve for that purpoſe; and ſure it is a moſt horrible injuſtice upon every ſlight ſurmiſe and fancy to hazard the bringing ſo great an evil upon another; eſpecially when it is conſidered, that thoſe ſurmiſes commonly ſpring rather from ſome cenſoriouſneſs, peeviſhneſs, or malice in the ſurmiſer, than from any real fault in the perſon ſo ſuſpected.

Falſe-witneſs.

2. The manner of ſpreading theſe falſe reports of both kinds, is not always the ſame; ſometimes it is more open and avowed, ſometimes more cloſe and private: the open is many times by falſe witneſs before the Courts of Juſtice: and this not only hurts a man in his credit, but in other reſpects alſo: 'tis the delivering him up to the puniſhment of the Law, and according to the nature of the crime pretended does him more or leſs miſchief; but if it be of the higheſt kind, it may concern his life, as we ſee it did in *Naboth*'s caſe, 1 *Kings* 21. How great and crying a ſin it is in this reſpect, as alſo in that of the perjury, you may learn from what hath been ſaid of both thoſe ſins. I am now to conſider it only, as it touches the credit; and to that it is a moſt grievous wound, thus

thus to have a crime publickly witnessed against one, and such as is scarce curable by any thing that can afterwards be done to clear him, and therefore whoever is guilty of this, doth a most outragious injustice to his neighbour: this is that which is expresly forbidden in the ninth Commandment, and was by God appointed to be punished by the inflicting of the very same suffering upon him, which his false testimony aimed to bring upon the other, *Deut.* 19. 16.

Publick slanders.

3. The second open way of spreading these reports, is by a publick and common declaring of them; though not before the Magistrate, as in the other case, yet in all companies and before such as are likely to carry it farther, and this is usually done with bitter railings and reproaches, it being an ordinary Art of slanderers, to revile those whom they slander, that so by the sharpness of the accusation, they may have the greater impression on the minds of the hearers: this both in respect of the slander, and the railing, is a high injury, and both of them such, as debar the committers from Heaven; thus *Psalm* 15. where the upright man is described, that shall have his part there, this is one special thing, verse 3. *That he slandereth not his neighbour.* And for railing, the Apostle in several places reckons it amongst those works of the flesh, which are to shut men out both from the Church here by excommunication, as you may see, 1 *Cor.* 15. 11. and from the Kingdom of God hereafter, as it is, 1 *Cor.* 6. 10.

Whiſpering.

4. The other more cloſe and private way of ſpreading ſuch reports is that of the Whiſperer, he that goes about from one to another, and privately vents his ſlanders, not out of an intent by that means to make them leſs publick, but rather more: this trick of delivering them by way of ſecret, being the way to make them both more believed, and more ſpoken of too; for he that receives ſuch a tale, as a ſecret from one, thinks to pleaſe ſome body elſe, by delivering it as a ſecret to him alſo; and ſo it paſſes from one hand to another, till at laſt it ſpread over a whole Town. This ſort of ſlanderer is of all others the moſt dangerous, for he works in the dark, tyes all he ſpeaks to, not to own him as the author; ſo that whereas in the more publick accuſations, the party may have ſome means of clearing himſelf and detecting his accuſer, here he ſhall have no poſſibility of that, the ſlander like a ſecret poyſon, works incurable effects, before ever the man diſcern it. This ſin of whiſpering is by *S. Paul* mentioned among thoſe great crimes, which are the effects of a reprobate mind, *Rom.* 1. 29. It is indeed one of the moſt incurable wounds of this ſword of the tongue; the very bane and peſt of humane ſociety: and that which not only robs ſingle perſons of their good names, but oftentimes whole families, nay, publick Societies of men of their peace; what ruines, what confuſions hath this one ſin wrought in the world? 'Tis *Solomon*'s obſervation, *Prov.* 18. 28. that a *Whiſperer ſeparateth chief friends*, and ſure one may truly ſay of tongues

tongues thus employed, that they are *ſet on fire of Hell*, as *S. James* ſaith, Chap. 3. 6.

5. This is ſuch a guilt, that we are to beware of all the degrees of approach to it, of which there are ſeveral ſteps; the firſt is the giving ear to, and cheriſhing of thoſe that come with ſlanders, for they that entertain and receive them, encourage them in the practice; for as our common Proverb ſays, If there were no Receivers, there would be no Thief; ſo if there were none that would give an ear to tales, there would be no tale-bearers. A ſecond ſtep is, the giving too eaſie credit to them, for this helps them to attain part of their end. They deſire to get a general ill opinion of ſuch a man, but the way of doing it muſt be by cauſing it, firſt, in particular men: and if thou ſuffer them to do it in thee, they have ſo far proſpered in their aim. And for thy own part thou doeſt a great injuſtice to thy neighbour, to believe ill of him without a juſt ground, which the accuſation of ſuch a perſon certainly is not. A third ſtep is the reporting to others, what is thus told thee; by which thou makeſt thy ſelf directly a party in the ſlander, and after thou haſt unjuſtly withdrawn from thy neighbour thy own good opinion, endeavoureſt to rob him alſo of that of others. This is very little below the guilt of the firſt whiſperer, and tends as much to the ruine of our neighbour's credit. And theſe ſeveral degrees have ſo cloſe a dependance one upon another, that it will be very hard for him that allows himſelf the firſt, to eſcape the other, and

Several ſteps towards this ſin.

indeed he that can take delight to hear his neighbour defamed, may well be preſumed of ſo malicious a humour, that 'tis not likely he ſhould ſtick at ſpreading the ſlander. He therefore that will preſerve his innocence in this matter, muſt never in the leaſt degree cheriſh or countenance any that brings theſe falſe reports. And it is not leſs neceſſary to his peace, than to his innocency; for he that once entertains them, muſt never expect quiet, but ſhall be continually incited, and ſtirred up even againſt his neareſt and deareſt relations; ſo that this whiſperer, and ſlanderer is to be lookt on by all, as a common enemy, he being ſo as well to thoſe to whom, as of whom he ſpeaks.

Deſpiſing and ſcoffing.

6. But beſides this groſſer way of ſlandering, there is another, whereby we may impair and leſſen the credit of our neighbour, and that is by contempt and deſpiſing, one common effect whereof is ſcoffing, and deriding him. This is very injurious to a man's reputation. For the generality of men do rather take up opinions upon truſt, than judgment, and therefore if they ſee a man deſpiſed, and ſcorned, they will be apt to do the like. But beſides this effect of it, there is a preſent injuſtice in the very act of deſpiſing, and ſcorning others. There are ordinarily but three things which are made the occaſions of it, (unleſs it be with ſuch, with whom vertue and godlineſs are made the moſt reproachful things, and ſuch deſpiſing is not only an injury to our neighbour, but even to God himſelf, for whoſe ſake it is, that he is ſo deſpiſed) thoſe three

three are, firſt, the infirmities, ſecondly, the calamities, thirdly, the ſins of a man, and each of theſe are very far from being ground of our triumphing over him.

7. Firſt, for infirmities, be they either of body or mind, the deformity and unhandſomneſs of the one, or the weakneſs and folly of the other, they are things out of his power to help, they are not his faults, but the wiſe diſpenſations of the great Creator, who beſtows the excellencies of body and mind, as he pleaſes; and therefore to ſcorn a Man, becauſe he hath them not, is in effect to reproach God who gave them not to him. *For infirmities.*

8. So alſo for the calamities and miſeries that befal a Man, be it want or ſickneſs, or whatever elſe, theſe alſo come by the providence of God, who raiſeth up and pulleth down, as ſeems good to him, and it belongs not to us to judge, what are the motives to him to do ſo, as many do, who upon any affliction that befals another, are preſently concluding, that ſure it is ſome extraordinary guilt, which pulls this upon him, though they have no particular to lay to his charge. This raſh judgment our Saviour reproves in the *Jews*, *Luke* 13. where on occaſion of the extraordinary ſufferings of the *Galileans*, he asketh them, verſe 2, 3. *Suppoſe ye that theſe Galileans were ſinners above all the Galileans, becauſe they ſuffered ſuch things? I tell you nay, but except you repent, ye ſhall all likewiſe periſh.* When we ſee God's hand heavy upon others, it is no *For calamities.*

part of our buſineſs to judge them, but our ſelves, and by repentance to prevent what our own ſins have deſerved. But to reproach, and revile any that are in affliction, is that barbarous cruelty taken notice of by the *Pſalmiſt*, as the height of wickedneſs, *Pſalm* 69. 26. *They perſecute him whom thou haſt ſmitten, and they talk to the grief of them whom thou haſt wounded:* In all the miſeries of others, compaſſion becomes a debt to them; how unjuſt are they then, that inſtead of paying them that debt, afflict them with ſcorn and reproach?

For ſins. 9. Nay, the very ſins of men, though, as they have more of their wills in them, they may ſeem more to deſerve reproach, yet certainly they alſo oblige us to the former duty of compaſſion, and that in the higheſt degree, as being the things, which of all others make a Man the moſt miſerable. In all theſe caſes, if we conſider how ſubject we are to the like our ſelves, and that it is only God's mercy to us, by which we are preſerved from the worſt that any Man elſe is under, it will ſurely better become us to look up to him with thankfulneſs, than down on them with contempt and deſpiſing. Thus you ſee the direct injuſtice of ſcorning and contemning our brethren, to which when that other is added, which naturally follows, as a conſequent of this, to wit, the begetting the like contempt in others, there can ſure be no doubt of its being a great and horrible injuſtice to our neighbour in reſpect of his credit.

10. Now

10. Now how great the injury of deſtroying a man's credit is, may be meaſured by theſe two things: firſt, the value of the thing he is robbed of, and ſecondly, the difficulty of making reparations. For the firſt, 'tis commonly known, that a man's good name is a thing he holds moſt precious, oftentimes dearer than his life, as we ſee by the hazards men ſometimes run to preſerve even a miſtaken reputation; but 'tis ſure, it is that, which hath even by ſober men been eſteemed one of the greateſt happineſſes of life: and to ſome ſort of men, ſuch eſpecially as ſubſiſt by dealings in the world, 'tis ſo neceſſary, that it may well be reckoned as the means of their livelihood, and then ſure, 'tis no ſlight matter to rob a man of what is thus valuable to him. *Deſtroying the credit a great injury,*

11. Secondly, the difficulty of making reparations encreaſeth the injury, and that is ſuch in this caſe of defamation, that I may rather call it an impoſſibility, than a difficulty. For when men are poſſeſt of an ill opinion of a perſon, 'tis no eaſie matter to work it out: ſo that the ſlanderer is herein like a young Conjurer, that raiſes a Devil he knows not how to lay again. Nay, ſuppoſe men were generally as willing to lay down ill conceits of their neighbours, as they are to take them up, yet how is it poſſible for him that makes even the moſt publick recantation of his ſlander, to be ſure that every man that hath come to the hearing of the one, ſhall do ſo of the other alſo? And if there *and irreparable.*

be but one person, that doth not, (as probably there will be many) then is the reparation still short of the injury.

Yet every guilty person must do all he can to repair the injury.

12. This consideration is very fit to make men afraid of doing this wrong to their neighbour; but let it not be made use of to excuse those that have already done the wrong, from endeavouring to make the best reparations they can; for though 'tis odds, it will not equal the injury, yet let them however do what they are able towards it. And this is so necessary towards the obtaining pardon of the sin, that none must expect the one, that do not perform the other. Whosoever therefore sets himself to repent of his faults of this kind, must by all prudent means endeavour to restore his neighbour to that degree of credit he hath deprived him of; and if that be not to be done without bringing the shame upon himself of confessing publickly the slander, he must rather submit to that, than be wanting to this necessary part of justice, which he owes to the wronged party.

13. Thus I have gone through these four branches of Negative Justice to our Neighbour; wherein we must yet further observe, that this justice binds us, not only in respect of our words and actions, but of our very thoughts and affections also; we are not only forbid to hurt, but to hate; not only restrained from bringing any of these evils forementioned upon

Justice in the thoughts.

upon him, but we muſt not ſo much as wiſh them before, nor delight in them after they are befallen him: we muſt take no pleaſure either in the ſin of his Soul, or hurt of his body: we muſt not envy him any good thing he enjoys, nor ſo much as wiſh to poſſeſs our ſelves of it; neither will it ſuffice us, that we ſo bridle our tongue, that we neither ſlander, nor revile, if we have that malice in our hearts, which makes us wiſh his diſcredit; or rejoyce when we find it procured, though we have no hand in the procuring it. This is the peculiar property of God's Laws, that they reach to the heart: whereas Mens can extend only to the words and actions; and the reaſon is clear, becauſe he is the only Law-giver, that can ſee what is in the heart: therefore if there were the perfecteſt innocency in our tongue and hands, yet if there be not this purity of heart, it will never ſerve to acquit us before him. The counſel therefore of *Solomon* is excellent, *Prov.* 4. 23. *Keep thy heart with all diligence, for out of it are the iſſues of life.* Let us ſtrictly guard that, ſo that no malicious unjuſt thought enter there: and that not only, as it may be the means of betraying us to the groſſer act, but alſo as it is in it ſelf ſuch a pollution in God's ſight, as will unfit us for the bleſſed viſion of God, whom none but the pure in heart have promiſe of ſeeing, *Matth.* 5. 8. *Bleſſed are the pure in heart, for they ſhall ſee God.*

14. I come now to ſpeak of the Poſitive part of Juſtice, which is the yielding to every Man that which by any kind of right he may challenge from *Poſitive Juſtice.*

from us. Of theſe dues there are ſome that are general to all Mankind, others that are reſtrained within ſome certain conditions and qualities of Men, and become due only by virtue of thoſe qualifications.

Speaking Truth a due to all men.

15. Of the firſt ſort, that is, thoſe that are due to all Men, we may reckon, firſt, the ſpeaking Truth, which is a common debt we owe to all Mankind; ſpeech is given us as the inſtrument of intercourſe and ſociety one with another, the means of diſcovering the mind, which otherwiſe lies hid and concealed, ſo that were it not for this, our converſations would be but the ſame as of Beaſts; Now this being intended for the good and advantage of Mankind, 'tis a due to it, that it be uſed to that purpoſe; but he that Lies, is ſo far from paying that debt, that on the contrary he makes his ſpeech the means of injuring and deceiving him he ſpeaks to.

Lying expreſly forbidden in Scripture.

16. There might much be ſaid to ſhew the ſeveral ſorts of Obligations we lie under to ſpeak truth to all men; but ſuppoſing I write to Chriſtians, I need not inſiſt upon any other, than the Commands we have of it in Scripture; thus *Eph.* 4. 25. the Apoſtle commands, that *putting away lying, they ſpeak every man truth with his neighbour:* And again, *Col.* 3. 9. *Lye not one to another:* And *Prov.* 6. 17. a lying tongue is mentioned as one of thoſe things that are abominations to the Lord. Yea ſo much doth he hate a lye, that it

is

is not the moſt pious and religious end, that can reconcile him to it; the man that lies, though in a zeal to God's glory, ſhall yet be judged as a ſinner, *Rom.* 3. 7. What ſhall then become of thoſe multitudes of Men that lie on quite other ends? Some out of malice, to miſchief others; ſome out of covetouſneſs, to defraud their neighbours; ſome out of pride, to ſet themſelves out; and ſome out of fear, to avoid danger, or hide a fault. But of a yet ſtranger ſort, than all theſe, are thoſe, that do it without any diſcernible temptation, that will tell lies by way of ſtory, take pleaſure in telling incredible things, from which themſelves reap nothing, but the reputation of impertinent lyars.

The great commonneſs and folly of this ſin.

17. Among theſe divers kinds of falſehood, Truth is become ſuch a rarity among us, that it is a moſt difficult matter to find ſuch a Man as *David* deſcribes; *Pſalm* 15. 2. *That ſpeaketh the truth from his heart.* Men have ſo glibbed their tongues to lying, that they do it familiarly upon any or no occaſion, never thinking that they are obſerved either by God or man. But they are extreamly deceived in both; for there is ſcarce any ſin (that is at all endeavoured to be hid) which is more diſcernible even to Men: they that have a cuſtom of lying, ſeldom fail (be their memory never ſo good) at ſome time or other to betray themſelves; and when they do, there is no ſort of ſin meets with greater ſcorn and reproach; a Lyar being by all accounted a title of the greateſt infamy and ſhame.

ſhame. But as for God, 'tis madneſs to hope that all their Arts can diſguiſe them from him, who needs none of thoſe caſual ways of diſcovery which Men do, but ſees the heart, and ſo knows at the very inſtant of ſpeaking, the falſehood of what is ſaid: and then by his Title of the God of Truth, is tyed not only to hate, but puniſh it: and accordingly you ſee, *Rev.* 22. that the lyars are in the number of thoſe that are ſhut out of the New *Jeruſalem*; and not only ſo, but alſo have their *part in the lake that burneth with Fire and Brimſtone.* If therefore thou be not of the humour of that unjuſt judge Chriſt ſpeaks of, *Luke* 18. 2. who *neither feared God, nor regarded man*, thou muſt reſolve on this part of Juſtice, the putting away lying which is abhorred by both.

Courteous behaviour a due to all men.

18. A ſecond thing we owe to all is Humanity and Courteſie of behaviour, contrary to that ſullen churliſhneſs we find ſpoken of in *Nabal*, who was of ſuch a temper, *that a man could not ſpeak to him*, 1 *Sam.* 25. 17. There is ſure ſo much of reſpect due to the very nature of Mankind, that no accidental advantage of wealth or honour, which one Man hath above another, can acquit him from that debt to it, even in the perſon of the meaneſt; and therefore that crabbed and harſh behaviour to any that bears but the form of a Man, is an injuſtice to that nature he partakes of. And when we conſider how much that nature is dignified by the Son of God his taking it upon him, the obligation to reverence it is yet greater,

greater, and conſequently the ſin of thus contemning it.

19. This is the common guilt of all proud and haughty perſons, who are ſo buſie in admiring themſelves, that they overlook all that is valuable in others, and ſo think they owe not ſo much as common civility to other men, whileſt they ſet up themſelves, as *Nebuchadnezzar* did his image, *to be worſhipped of all.* This is ſure very contrary to what the Apoſtle exhorts, *Rom.* 12. 10. *In honour prefer one another*; and again, *Phil.* 2. 4. *Look not every man on his own things, but every man alſo on the things of others:* and let ſuch remember the ſentence of our bleſſed Saviour, *Luk.* 14. 11. *He that exalteth himſelf ſhall be abaſed, and he that humbleth himſelf ſhall be exalted,* which we often find made good to us, in the ſtrange downfals of proud men. And it is no wonder, for this ſin makes both God and men our enemies; God, as the Scripture every where teſtifies, abhors it, and all that are guilty of it, and men are by means of it uſed ſo contemptuouſly and unkindly by us, that they are by nothing more provoked againſt us; and then whom God and man thus reſiſt, who ſhall ſecure and uphold?

Not payed by the proud man.

20. A third thing we owe to all is Meekneſs; that is, ſuch a patience and gentleneſs towards all, as may bridle that mad paſſion of anger, which is not only very uneaſie to our ſelves, as hath already been ſhewed, but alſo very miſchievous to our neighbours,

Meekneſs a due to all men.

as

as the many outrages, that are oft committed in it, do abundantly teſtifie. That this duty of meekneſs is to be extended to all men, there is no doubt: for the Apoſtle in expreſs words commands it, 1 *Theſſ.* 5. 14. *Be patient towards all men*, and that it ſhould ſeem, in ſpight of all provocation to the contrary, for the very next words are, *See that none render evil for evil, or railing for railing*; and *Timothy* is commanded to exerciſe this meekneſs even towards them who oppoſe themſelves againſt the Doctrine of the Goſpel, 2 *Tim.* 2. 25. which was a caſe, wherein ſome heat would probably have been allowed, if it might have been in any.

Brawling very inſufferable.

21. This vertue of meekneſs is ſo neceſſary to the preſerving the peace of the world, that it is no wonder, that Chriſt, who came to plant peace among men, ſhould enjoyn meekneſs to all. I am ſure the contrary effects of rage and anger are every where diſcernible; it breeds diſquiet in Kingdoms, in Neighbourhoods, in Families, and even between the neareſt relations; 'tis ſuch a humour, that *Solomon* warns us never to enter a friendſhip with a man that is of it, *Prov.* 22. 24. *Make no friendſhip with an angry man, and with a furious man thou ſhalt not go.* It makes a man unfit to be either friend or companion, and indeed makes one inſufferable to all that have to do with him, as we are again taught by *Solomon*, Prov. 21. 19. where he prefers the *dwelling in a wilderneſs rather than with a contentious and angry woman*; and yet a woman has ordinarily only that

that one weapon of the tongue to offend with. Indeed to any that have not the ſame unquietneſs of humour, there can ſcarce be a greater uneaſineſs, than to converſe with thoſe that have it, though it never proceed farther than words. How great this ſin is, we may judge by what our Saviour ſays of it, *Matth.* 5. where there are ſeveral degrees of puniſhment allotted to ſeveral degrees of it: but alas! we daily out-go that which he there ſets as the higheſt ſtep of this ſin; the calling, *Thou fool*, is a modeſt ſort of reviling, compared with thoſe multitudes of bitter reproaches we uſe in our rages.

It leads to that great ſin of curſing.

22. Nay, we often go yet higher; reproaches ſerve not our turn, but we muſt curſe too. How common is it to hear Men uſe the horridſt execrations, and curſings upon every the ſlighteſt cauſe of diſpleaſure? Nay, perhaps without any cauſe at all; ſo utterly have we forgot the rule of the Apoſtle, *Rom.* 12. 14. *Bleſs and curſe not*; Yea, the precept of our bleſſed Saviour himſelf, *Matth.* 5. 44. *Pray for thoſe that deſpightfully uſe you.* Chriſt bids us pray for thoſe who do us all injury, and we are often curſing thoſe who do us none. This is a kind of ſaying our prayers backward indeed, which is ſaid to be part of the Ceremony the Devil uſes at the making of a Witch, and we have in this caſe alſo reaſon to look on it, as a means of bringing us into acquaintance and league with that accurſed ſpirit here, and to a perpetual abiding with him hereafter. 'Tis the language of Hell, which can never

never fit us to be Citizens of the New *Jeruſalem*, but marks us out for inhabitants of that land of darkneſs. I conclude this with the advice of the Apoſtle, *Eph.*4.31. *Let all bitterneſs and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil ſpeaking be put away from you with all malice.*

Particular dues.

23. Having ſpoken thus far of thoſe common dues wherein all Men are concerned and have a right, I am now to proceed to thoſe other ſorts of dues, which belong to particular perſons, by virtue of ſome ſpecial qualification. Theſe qualifications may be of three kinds, that of Excellency, that of Want, and that of Relation.

A reſpect due to men of extraordinary gifts.

24. By that of Excellency, I mean any extraordinary gifts, or endowments of a perſon; ſuch as wiſdom, learning, and the like, but eſpecially grace. Theſe being the ſingular gifts of God, have a great value and reſpect due to them, whereſoever they are to be found; and this we muſt readily pay by a willing and glad acknowledgment of thoſe his gifts in any he has beſtowed them on, and bearing them a reverence and reſpect, anſwerable thereunto, and not out of an overweening of our own excellencies, deſpiſe and undervalue thoſe of others, as they do who will yield nothing to be reaſon, but what themſelves ſpeak, nor any thing piety, but what agrees with their own practice.

25. Alſo

25. Alſo we muſt not envy or grudge that they have thoſe gifts, for that is not only an injuſtice to them, but injurious alſo to God who gave them, as it is at large ſet forth in the parable of the labourers, *Matth.* 20. where he asks them who grumbled at the Maſter's bounty to others, *Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with my own? is thine eye evil becauſe mine is good?* This envying at God's goodneſs to others, is in effect a murmuring againſt God, who thus diſpoſes it; neither can there be a greater, and more direct oppoſition againſt him, than for me to hate and wiſh ill to a man, for no other reaſon, but becauſe God has loved and done well to him. And then in reſpect of the man, 'tis the moſt unreaſonable thing in the world, to love him the leſs, meerly becauſe he has thoſe good qualities, for which I ought to love him more. *We are not to envy them.*

26. Neither muſt we detract from the excellencies of others, we muſt not ſeek to eclipſe or darken them by denying either the kinds or degrees of them, by that means to take off that eſteem which is due to them. This ſin of detraction is generally the effect of the former, of envy; he that envies a man's worth, will be apt to do all he can to leſſen it in the opinions of others, and to that purpoſe will either ſpeak ſlightly of his excellencies, or if they be ſo apparent, that he knows not how to cloud them, he will try if he can by reporting ſome either real, or feigned infirmity of his, take off from the value of the other, and ſo by caſting in ſome *Nor detract from them.*

ſome dead flies, as the Wiſe man ſpeaks, *Eccleſ.* 10. 1. ſtrive to *corrupt the ſavour of the ointment.* This is a great injuſtice, and directly contrary to that duty we owe, of acknowledging and reverencing the gifts of God in our brethren.

The folly of both thoſe ſins.

27. And both thoſe ſins of envy and detraction do uſually prove as great follies as wickedneſs; the envy conſtantly brings pain and torment to a man's ſelf, whereas if he could but chearfully and gladly look on thoſe good things of anothers, he could never fail to be the better for them himſelf: the very pleaſure of ſeeing them would be ſome advantage to him: but beſides that, thoſe gifts of his brother may be many ways helpful to him; his wiſdom and learning may give him inſtruction; his piety and vertue, example, *&c.* But all this the envious man loſeth, and hath nothing in exchange for it, but a continual fretting, and gnawing of heart.

28. And then for detraction, that can hardly be ſo managed, but it will be found out; he that is ſtill putting in Caveats againſt mens good thoughts of others, will quickly diſcover himſelf to do it out of envy, and then that will be ſure to leſſen their eſteem of himſelf, but not of thoſe he envies, it being a ſort of bearing teſtimony to thoſe excellencies, that he thinks them worth the envying.

A reſpect due to men in regard of their ranks and qualities.

29. What hath been ſaid of the value and reſpect due to thoſe excellencies of the mind, may in

in a lower degree be applied to the outward advantages of honour, greatneſs, and the like. Theſe though they are not of equal value with the former (and ſuch for which no man is to prize himſelf) yet in regard that theſe degrees and diſtinctions of men are by God's wiſe providence diſpoſed for the better ordering of the world, there is ſuch a civil reſpect due to thoſe, to whom God hath diſpens'd them, as may beſt preſerve that order, for which they were intended. Therefore all inferiors are to behave themſelves to their ſuperiors with modeſty and reſpect, and not by a rude boldneſs confound that order which it hath pleaſed God to ſet in the world, but according as our Church Catechiſm teaches, *Order themſelves lowly and reverently to all their betters.* And here the former caution againſt envy comes in moſt ſeaſonably; theſe outward advantages being things, of which generally men have more taſte, than of the other, and therefore will be more apt to envy and repine to ſee others exceed them therein; to this therefore all the former conſiderations againſt envy will be very proper, and the more neceſſary to be made uſe of, by how much the temptation is in this caſe to moſt minds the greater.

Dues to thoſe that are in any ſort of want.

30. The ſecond qualification is that of want; whoever is in diſtreſs for any thing, wherewith I can ſupply him, that diſtreſs of his makes it a duty in me ſo to ſupply him, and this in all kinds of wants. Now the ground of its being a duty is, that God hath

hath given men abilities not only for their own uſe, but for the advantage and benefit of others, and therefore what is thus given for their uſe, becomes a debt to them, whenever their need requires it. Thus he that is ignorant and wants knowledge, is to be inſtructed by him that hath it, and this is one ſpecial end, why that knowledge is given him, *The tongue of the learned is given to ſpeak a word in ſeaſon, Eſay* 50.4. He that is in ſadneſs and affliction, is to be comforted by him that is himſelf in chearfulneſs. This we ſee *S. Paul* makes the end of God's comforting him, that he *might be able to comfort them that are in any trouble*, 2 *Cor.* 1.4. He that is in any courſe of ſin, and wants reprehenſion and counſel, muſt have that want ſupplied to him by thoſe who have ſuch abilities and opportunities, as may make it likely to do good. That this is a juſtice we owe to our neighbour, appears plainly by that Text, *Lev.* 19.17. *Thou ſhalt not hate thy brother in thy heart, thou ſhalt in any wiſe reprove him, and not ſuffer ſin upon him*; where we are under the ſame obligation to reprove him, that we are not to hate him. He that lies under any ſlander, or unjuſt defamation, is to be defended and cleared by him that knows his innocence, or elſe he makes himſelf guilty of the ſlander, becauſe he neglects to do that which may remove it; and how great an injuſtice that of ſlandering our neighbour is, I have already ſhewed.

To the poor.

31. Laſtly, He that is in poverty and need, muſt be relieved by him that is in plenty; and he is bound to it, not only

only in charity, but even in juſtice. *Solomon* calls it a due, *Prov.* 3. 27. *Withhold no good from him to whom it is due, when it is in the power of thine hand to do it:* and what that good is, he explains in the very next verſe: *Say not to thy neighbour, Go and come again, and to morrow I will give, when thou haſt it by thee.* It ſeems 'tis the withholding a due, ſo much as to defer giving to our poor neighbour: And we find God did among the *Jews* ſeparate a certain portion of every Man's encreaſe to the uſe of the poor, a tenth every third year (which is all one with a thirtieth part every year,) *Deut.* 14. 28, 29. And this was to be paid, not as a charity, or liberality, but as a debt, they were unjuſt, if they withheld it. And ſurely we have no reaſon to think, that Chriſtian Juſtice is ſunk ſo much below the Jewiſh, that either nothing at all, or a leſs proportion is now required of us. I wiſh our practice were but at all anſwerable to our obligation in this point, and then ſurely we ſhould not ſee ſo many *Lazarus*'s lie unrelieved at our doors, they having a better right to our ſuperfluities, than we our ſelves have; and then what is it but arrant robbery to beſtow that upon our vanities, nay our ſins, which ſhould be their portion?

God withdraws thoſe abilities which are not thus employed.

32. In all the foregoing caſes he that hath ability is to look upon himſelf as God's ſteward, who hath put it into his hands to diſtribute to them that want, and therefore not to do it, is the ſame injuſtice and fraud, that it would be in any ſteward to purſe up that money for

for his private benefit, which was intrusted to him, for the maintenance of the family; and he that shall do thus hath just reason to expect the doom of the unjust steward, *Luke* 16. *to be put out of his stewardship*, to have those abilities taken from him, which he hath so unfaithfully employed. And as for all the rest, so particularly for that of wealth, 'tis very commonly to be observed, that it is withdrawn from those that thus defraud the poor of their parts, the griping Miser coming often by strange undiscernible ways to poverty; and no wonder, he having no title to God's blessing on his heap, who does not consecrate a part to him in his poor Members. And therefore we see the *Israelites* before they could make that challenge of God's promise to bless them, *Deut.* 26. 15. *Look down from thy holy habitation and bless thy people Israel*, &c. they were first to pay the poor man's tithes, *verse* 12. without which they could lay no claim to it. This withholding *more than is meet*, as *Solomon* says, *Prov.* 11. 24. *tends to poverty*; and therefore as thou wouldest play the good husband for thy self, be careful to perform this justice according to thy ability to all that are in want.

Duties in respect of relation.

33. The third qualification is that of relation, and of that there may be divers sorts, arising from divers grounds, and duties answerable to each of them. There is first a relation of a Debtor to a Creditor; and he that stands in that relation to any, whether by vertue of bargain, loan or promise, 'tis his duty to pay justly what he owes, if he be able

able (as on the other ſide, if he be not, 'tis the Creditors, to deal charitably and Chriſtianly with him, and not to exact of him beyond his ability.) But I need not inſiſt on this, having already, by ſhewing you the ſin of withholding debts, informed you of this duty.

Gratitude to Benefactors.

34. There is alſo a relation of an obliged Perſon to his Benefactor, that is, one that hath done him good, of what kind ſoever, whether ſpiritual or corporal; and the duty of that perſon is, firſt, thankfulneſs, that is, a ready and hearty acknowledgment of the courteſie received: ſecondly, prayer for God's bleſſings, and rewards upon him; and thirdly, an endeavour, as opportunity and ability ſerves, to make returns of kindneſs, by doing good turns back again. This duty of gratitude to Benefactors is ſo generally acknowledged by all, even the moſt barbarous and ſavageſt of Men, that he muſt have put off much of his humane nature, that refuſes to perform it. The very *Publicans* and ſinners, as our Saviour ſays, *do good to thoſe that do good to them.*

The contrary too common.

35. Yet how many of us fail even in this! how frequent is it to ſee Men, not only neglect to repay courteſies, but return injuries inſtead of them? It is too obſervable in many particulars, but in none more, than in the caſe of advice, and admonition, which is of all others the moſt precious part of kindneſs, the realleſt good turn that can be done from one Man to another. And therefore thoſe that do this to

us, ſhould be lookt on as our prime and greateſt benefactors. But alas! how few are there that can find gratitude, ſhall I ſay? nay, patience for ſuch a courteſie? Go about to admoniſh a Man of a fault, or tell him of an Error, he preſently looks on you as his enemy: you are, as *S. Paul* tells the *Galatians*, Ch. 4. 16. *become his enemy, becauſe you tell him the truth:* ſuch a pride there is in Mens hearts, that they muſt not be told of any thing amiſs, though it be with no other intent, but that they may amend it. A ſtrange madneſs this is, the ſame that it would be in a ſick Man, to fly in the face of him that comes to cure him, on a fancy that he diſparaged him in ſuppoſing him ſick; ſo that we may well ſay with the Wiſe man, *Prov.* 12. 1. *He that hateth reproof is brutiſh.* There cannot be in the World a more unhappy temper, for it fortifies a Man in his ſins; raiſes ſuch Mounts and Bulwarks about them, that no Man can come to aſſault them; and if we may believe *Solomon*, deſtruction will not fail to attend it, *Prov.* 29. 1. *He that being often reproved hardneth his neck ſhall ſuddenly be deſtroyed, and that without remedy.* But then again in reſpect of the admoniſher, 'tis the greateſt injuſtice, I may ſay, cruelty that can be; he comes in tenderneſs and compaſſion to reſcue thee from danger; and to that purpoſe puts himſelf upon a very uneaſie task; for ſuch the general impatience Men have to admonition, hath now made it, and what a defeat, what a grief is it to him to find, that inſtead of reforming the firſt fault, thou art run into a ſecond, to wit, that of cauſleſs diſpleaſure againſt him? This is one of the worſt, and yet I doubt, the commoneſt ſort of

of unthankfulneſs to Benefactors, and ſo a great failing in that duty we owe to that ſort of relation. But perhaps theſe will be lookt on as remote relations, (yet 'tis ſure they are ſuch as challenge all that duty I have aſſigned to them) I ſhall in the next place proceed to thoſe relations, which are by all acknowledged to be of the greateſt nearneſs.

SUNDAY XIV.

Of duty to Magiſtrates, Paſtors. Of the duty of Parents to Children, &c. *Of Childrens duty unto Parents,* &c.

Sect. 1. THE firſt of thoſe nearer ſorts of Relations is that of a Parent; and here it will be neceſſary to conſider the ſeveral ſorts of Parents, according to which the duty of them is to be meaſured. Thoſe are theſe three, the Civil, the Spiritual, the Natural. *Duty to Parents.*

2. The Civil Parent is he whom God hath eſtabliſht the Supreme Magiſtrate, who by a juſt right poſſeſſes the Throne in a Nation. This is the common Father of all thoſe that are under his authority. *Duties to the Supreme Magiſtrate.*

Honour. The duty we owe to this Parent, is first Honour and Reverence, looking on him, as upon one, on whom God hath ſtamped much of his own power and authority, and therefore paying him all honour and eſteem, never daring upon any pretence whatſoever, to *ſpeak evil of the Ruler of our people*, Acts 23.5.

Tribute. 3. Secondly, paying Tribute; This is expreſly commanded by the Apoſtle, *Rom.* 13.6. *Pay ye Tribute alſo, for they are God's Miniſters attending continually upon this very thing.* God has ſet them apart as Miniſters for the common good of the People, and therefore 'tis all juſtice, they ſhould be maintained and ſupported by them. And indeed when it is conſidered, what are the cares and troubles of that high calling, how many thorns are platted in every crown, we have very little reaſon to envy them theſe dues; and it may truly be ſaid, there is none of their poor labouring Subjects that earns their living ſo hardly.

Prayers for them. 4. Thirdly, We are to pray for them: this is alſo expreſly commanded by the Apoſtle, 1 *Tim.* 2. 2. to be done for *Kings and for all that are in authority.* The buſineſſes of that calling are ſo weighty, the dangers and hazards of it ſo great, that they of all others need prayers for God's direction, aſſiſtance, and bleſſing, and the prayers that are thus poured out for them, will return into our own boſoms, for the bleſſings they receive from God tend to the good of the

the People, to their *living a quiet and peaceable life*, as it is in the close of the Verse forementioned.

5. Fourthly, We are to pay them Obedience. This is likewise strictly charged by the Apostle, 1 *Pet.* 2. 13. *Submit your selves to every ordinance of man for the Lord's sake, whether it be to the King as Supreme, or unto Governours as those that are sent by him.* We owe such an obedience to the supreme power, that whoever is authoriz'd by him, we are to submit to; and S. *Paul* likewise is most full to this purpose, *Rom.* 13. 1. *Let every soul be subject to the higher powers:* And again, Verse 2. *Whosoever resisteth the powers, resisteth the Ordinance of God.* And 'tis observable that these precepts were given at a time, when those powers were Heathens, and cruel persecutors of Christianity; to shew us that no pretence of the wickedness of our Rulers can free us of this duty. An obedience we must pay either Active or Passive; the Active in the case of all lawful commands; that is, whenever the Magistrate commands something, which is not contrary to some command of God, we are then bound to act according to that command of the Magistrate, to do the things he requires. But when he enjoyns any thing contrary to what God hath commanded, we are not then to pay him this active obedience: we may, nay we must refuse thus to act, (yet here we must be very well assured that the thing is so contrary, and not pretend conscience for a cloak of stubbornness) we are in that case to *obey God rather than man.* *Obedience.*

But even this is a ſeaſon for the Paſſive obedience, we muſt patiently ſuffer, what he inflicts on us for ſuch refuſal, and not to ſecure our ſelves riſe up againſt him. *For who can ſtreteh his hand againſt the Lord's anointed, and be guiltleſs?* ſays *David* to *Abiſhai*, 1 *Sam.* 26. 9. and that at a time when *David* was under a great perſecution from *Saul*, nay, had alſo the aſſurance of the kingdom after him; and *S. Paul*'s ſentence in this caſe is moſt heavy, *Rom.* 13. 2. *They that reſiſt ſhall receive to themſelves damnation.* Here is very ſmall encouragement to any to riſe up againſt the lawful Magiſtrate, for though they ſhould ſo far proſper here, as to ſecure themſelves from him by this means, yet there is a King of kings from whom no power can ſhelter them, and this damnation in the cloſe will prove a ſad prize of their Victories. What is on the other ſide the duty of the Magiſtrate to the People will be in vain to mention here, none of that rank being like to read this Treatiſe, and it being very uſeleſs for the People to enquire, what is the duty of their Supreme, wherein the moſt are already much better read, than in their own: it may ſuffice them to know, that whatſoever his duty is, or however performed, he is accountable to none but God, and no failing of his part can warrant them to fail of theirs.

Duties to our Paſtors,

6. The ſecond ſort of Parents are the ſpiritual; that is, the Miniſters of the Word, whether ſuch as be Governours in the Church, or others under them, who are to perform the ſame offices to our Souls, that our natural

natural Parents do to our bodies. Thus S. *Paul* tells the *Corinthians*, that in *Chriſt Jeſus he had begotten them through the Goſpel*, 1 Cor. 4. 15. And the *Galatians*, Chap. 4. 19. that he *travails in birth of them, till Chriſt be formed in them:* And again, 1 Cor. 3. 2. *He had fed them with Milk*, that is, ſuch Doctrines as were agreeable to that infant ſtate of Chriſtianity they were then in; but he had *ſtronger meat for them of full age*, Heb. 5. 14. All theſe are the offices of a Parent, and therefore they that perform them to us may well be accounted as ſuch.

7. Our duty to theſe is firſt to love them, to bear them that kindneſs, which belongs to thoſe who do us the greateſt benefits. This is required by S. *Paul* 1 Theſſ. 5. 13. *I beſeech you brethren, mark them which labour among you, and are over you in the Lord, and admoniſh you, and eſteem them very highly in love for their works ſake.* The work is ſuch as ought in all reaſon to procure them love, it being of the higheſt advantage to us. *Love.*

8. Secondly, 'tis our duty to value and eſteem them, as we ſee in the text now mentioned; and ſurely this is moſt reaſonable, if we conſider either the nature of their work, or who it is that employs them. The nature of their work is of all others the moſt excellent. We uſe to value other profeſſions proportionably to the dignity and worth of the things they deal in. Now ſurely there is no Merchandize of equal worth with a Soul; and this is their Traffick, reſcuing precious ſouls *Eſteem.*

from perdition. And if we conſider further, who it is that imploys them, it yet adds to the reverence due to them. They are *Ambaſſadors for Chriſt*, 2 *Cor.* 5. 20. And Ambaſſadors are by the laws of all Nations to be uſed with a reſpect anſwerable to the quality of thoſe that ſend them. Therefore Chriſt tells his Diſciples, when he ſends them out to preach, *He that deſpiſeth you deſpiſeth me, and he that deſpiſeth me deſpiſeth him that ſent me*, *Luke* 10. 16. It ſeems there is more depends on the deſpiſing of Miniſters, than Men ordinarily conſider, 'tis the deſpiſing of God and Chriſt both. Let thoſe think of this, who make it their paſtime and ſport to affront and deride this calling. And let thoſe alſo, who dare preſume to exerciſe the Office of it, without being lawfully called to it, which is a moſt high preſumption; 'tis as if a Man of his own head ſhould go, as an Ambaſſador from his Prince. The Apoſtle ſays of the Prieſts of the Law, which yet are inferiour to thoſe of the Goſpel, *That no man taketh this honour to himſelf, but he which was called of God*, *Heb.* 5. 4. How ſhall then any Man dare to aſſume this greater honour to himſelf that is not called to it? Neither will it ſuffice to ſay, they have the inward call of the ſpirit; for ſince God hath eſtabliſhed an order in the Church, for the admitting Men to this Office, they that ſhall take it upon them without that authority, reſiſt that ordinance, and are but of the number of thoſe thieves and robbers, as our Saviour ſpeaks, *John* 10. *which come not in by the door*. Beſides, the ſad experience of theſe times ſhews, that many who pretend moſt to this inward

inward call of the ſpirit, are called by ſome other ſpirit than that of God, the doctrines they vent, being uſually directly contrary to that word of his, on which all true Doctrines muſt be founded. Such are to be lookt upon as thoſe ſeducers, thoſe falſe prophets, whereof we are ſo often warn'd in the Epiſtles of the Apoſtles. And whoſoever countenances them, or follows them, partakes with them in their guilt. It is recorded of *Jeroboam*, as a crying ſin; that he made of the meaneſt of the people Prieſts; that is, ſuch as had by God's inſtitution no right to it: and whoever hearkens to theſe uncalled preachers, runs into that very ſin: for without the encouragement of being followed, they would not long continue in the courſe, and therefore they that give them that encouragement, have much to anſwer for, and are certainly guilty of the ſin of deſpiſing their true Paſtors, when they ſhall thus ſet up theſe falſe apoſtles againſt them. This is a guilt this age is too much concern'd in. God in his mercy ſo timely convince us of it, as may put a ſtop to that confuſion and impiety, which breaks in ſo faſt upon us by it.

9. Thirdly, We owe to them maintenance: but of this I have ſpoken already in the firſt part of this Book, and ſhall not here repeat. *Maintenance.*

Fourthly, We owe them obedience, *Obey them*, ſaith the Apoſtle, *that have the rule over you*, and ſubmit *your ſelves, for they watch for your ſouls*, *Heb.* 13. 17. This obedience is to be paid them in ſpiritual things; that is, whatſoever they out of God's *Obedience.*

word ſhall declare to us to be God's commands, theſe we are diligently to obey, remembring that it is not they but God requires it, according to that of Chriſt, *He that heareth you heareth me*, *Luke* 10. 6. And this, whether it be delivered by the way of publick preaching, or private exhortation, for in both, ſo long as they keep them to the rule, which is God's Word, they are the *Meſſengers of the Lord of Hoſts*, *Mal.* 2. 7. This obedience the Apoſtle inforceth from a double motive, one taken from their Miniſtry, another from themſelves. *They watch*, ſays he, *for your Souls, as they that muſt give an account, that they may do it with joy, and not with grief.* The People are by their obedience to enable their Paſtors to give a comfortable account of their Souls: and it is a moſt unkind return of all their care and labours, to be put to grieve for the ill ſucceſs of them. But then in the ſecond place, 'tis their own concernment alſo; they may put their Miniſters to the diſcomfort of ſeeing all their pains caſt away, but themſelves are like to get little by it, that (ſays the Apoſtle, *Heb.* 13. 17.) *will be unprofitable for you*; 'tis your ſelves that will finally prove the loſers by it, you loſe all thoſe glorious rewards, which are here offered, as the crown of this obedience; you get nothing but an addition to your ſin and puniſhment; for as our Saviour tells the *Phariſees*, *if he had not come and ſpoken to them, they had not had ſin*, *John* 15. 24. that is, in compariſon with what they then had; ſo certainly they that never had the Goſpel preached to them, are much more innocent than they that have heard and reſiſted it. And for the

the puniſhment, what Chriſt told thoſe to whom he had preached, *that it ſhould be more tolerable for Tyre and Sydon*, which were Heathen Cities, *than for them*, the ſame undoubtedly we may conclude for our ſelves.

10. Laſtly, We are to pray for them; This *S. Paul* every where requires of his ſpiritual children; thus *Eph.*6.7,8. having commanded prayer for all Saints, he adds, *And for me that utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth boldly to make known the myſtery of the Goſpel*; and ſo again, *Col.* 4. 3. And this remains ſtill a duty to theſe ſpiritual Fathers, to pray for ſuch aſſiſtances of God's ſpirit to them, as may enable them rightly to diſcharge that Holy Calling. I ſhall omit to ſet down here what is the duty of Miniſters to the People, upon the ſame conſideration on which I forbare to mention the duty of Magiſtrates. *Prayers for them.*

11. The third ſort of Parent is the natural, the *Fathers of our fleſh*, as the Apoſtle calls them, *Heb.*12.9. And to theſe we owe ſeveral duties; as firſt, we owe them reverence and reſpect; we muſt behave our ſelves towards them with all humility and obſervance, and muſt not upon any pretence of infirmity in them, deſpiſe or contemn them, either in outward behaviour, or ſo much as inwardly in our hearts. If indeed they have infirmities, it muſt be our buſineſs to cover and conceal them; like *Shem* and *Japhet*; who, while curſed *Cham* publiſht *Duties to our natural Parents.* *Reverence.*

liſht and *diſcloſed the nakedneſs of their Father, covered it, Gen.* 9. 23. and that in ſuch a manner too, as even themſelves might not behold it. We are as much as may be to keep our ſelves from looking on thoſe nakedneſſes of our Parents, which may attempt us to think irreverently of them. This is very contrary to the practice of too many Children, who do not only publiſh and deride the infirmities of their Parents, but pretend they have thoſe infirmities they have not; there is ordinarily ſuch a pride and headineſs in youth, that they cannot abide to ſubmit to the counſels and directions of their Elders, and therefore to ſhake them off, are willing to have them paſs for the effects of dotage, when they are indeed the fruits of ſobriety and experience. To ſuch the exhortation of *Solomon* is very neceſſary, *Prov.* 24. 22. *Hearken to thy father that begat thee, and deſpiſe not thy mother when ſhe is old.* A multitude of Texts more there are in that Book to this purpoſe, which ſhews that the wiſeſt of Men thought it neceſſary for Children to attend to the counſel of their Parents. But the youth of our Age, ſet up for wiſdom the quite contrary way, and think they then become wits, when they are advanced to the deſpiſing the counſel, yea, mocking the perſons of their Parents. Let ſuch, if they will not practiſe the exhortations, yet remember the threatning of the Wiſe man, *Prov.* 30. 17. *The eye that mocketh his father, and deſpiſeth to obey his mother, the Ravens of the valley ſhall pick it out, and the young Eagles ſhall eat it.*

12. A ſecond duty we owe to them is Love; we are to bear them a real kindneſs, ſuch as may make us heartily deſirous of all manner of good to them, and abhor to do any thing that may grieve and diſquiet them. This will appear but common gratitude, when 'tis remembred what our Parents have done for us, how they were not only the inſtruments of firſt bringing us into the World, but alſo of ſuſtaining and ſupporting us after; and certainly they that rightly weigh the cares and fears, that go to the bringing up of a Child, will judge the love of that Child to be but a moderate return for them. This love is to be expreſt ſeveral ways, firſt, in all kindneſs of behaviour, carrying our ſelves not only with an awe and reſpect, but with kindneſs and affection, and therefore moſt gladly and readily doing thoſe things, which may bring joy and comfort to them, and carefully avoiding whatever may grieve and afflict them. Secondly, this love is to be expreſt in praying for them. The debt a Child owes to a Parent is ſo great, that he can never hope himſelf to diſcharge it, he is therefore to call in God's aid, to beg of him, that he will reward all the good his Parents have done for him, by multiplying his bleſſings upon them; what ſhall we then ſay to thoſe Children, that inſtead of calling to Heaven for bleſſings on their Parents, ranſack Hell for curſes on them, and pour out the blackeſt execrations againſt them? This is a thing ſo horrid, that one would think they needed no perſwaſion againſt it; becauſe none could be ſo vile, as to fall into it: but we ſee God himſelf, who beſt *Love.*

beſt knows Mens hearts, ſaw it poſſible, and therefore laid the heavieſt puniſhment upon it, *He that curſeth Father or Mother, let him die the death*, *Exod.* 21. 17. And alas! our daily experience tells us, 'tis not only poſſible but common, even this of uttering curſes. But 'tis to be feared, there is another yet more common, that is, the wiſhing curſes, though fear or ſhame keep them from ſpeaking out. How many Children are there, that either through impatience of the Government, or greedineſs of the poſſeſſions of the Parents, have wiſht their deaths? but whoever doth ſo, let him remember, that how ſliely and fairly ſoever he carry it before Men, there is one that ſees thoſe ſecreteſt wiſhes of his heart, and in his ſight he aſſuredly paſſes for this hainous offender, a curſer of his Parents. And then let it be conſidered, that God has as well the power of puniſhing, as of ſeeing, and therefore ſince he hath pronounced death to be the reward of that ſin, 'tis not unreaſonable to expect he may himſelf inflict it; that they who watch for the death of their Parents, may untimely meet with their own. The fifth Commandment promiſeth long life as the reward of honouring the Parent, to which 'tis very agreeable, that untimely death be the puniſhment of the contrary, and ſure there is nothing more highly contrary to that duty, than this we are now ſpeaking of, the curſing our Parents.

Obedience.

13. The third duty we owe to them is Obedience; This is not only contained in the fifth Commandment, but expreſly enjoyned in other places of Scri-

Scripture, *Epheſ.* 6. 1. *Children obey your Parents in the Lord, for this is right*; and again, *Col.* 3. 20. *Children obey your Parents in all things, for this is well-pleaſing to the Lord.* We owe them an obedience in all things, unleſs where their commands are contrary to the commands of God, for in that caſe our duty to God muſt be preferred; and therefore if any Parent ſhall be ſo wicked, as to require his Child to ſteal or lie, or to do any unlawful thing, the Child then offends not againſt his duty, though he diſobey that command, nay, he muſt diſobey, or elſe he offends againſt a higher duty, even that he owes to God his Heavenly Father. Yet when 'tis thus neceſſary to refuſe obedience, he ſhould take care to do it in ſuch a modeſt, and reſpectful manner, that it may appear 'tis conſcience only, and not ſtubbornneſs moves him to it. But in caſe of all lawful commands; that is, when the thing commanded is either good, or not evil, when it hath nothing in it contrary to our duty to God, there the Child is bound to obey, be the command in a weightier or lighter matter. How little this duty is regarded is too manifeſt every where in the World, where Parents generally have their Children no longer under command, than they are under the rod; when they are once grown up, they think themſelves free from all obedience to them; or if ſome do continue to pay it, yet let the motive of it be examined, and 'twill in too many be found only Worldly prudence, they fear to diſpleaſe their Parents, leſt they ſhould ſhorten their hand towards them, and ſo they ſhall loſe ſome-

what

what by it; but how few are they that obey purely upon conſcience of duty? This ſin of Diſobedience to Parents was by the Law of *Moſes* puniſhable with death, as you may read *Deut.* 21. 18. but if Parents now adays ſhould proceed ſo with their children, many might ſoon make themſelves childleſs.

Eſpecially in their Marriage.

14. But of all the acts of diſobedience, that of marrying againſt the conſent of the Parent, is one of the higheſt. Children are ſo much the Goods, the Poſſeſſions of their Parent, that they cannot without a kind of theft, give away themſelves without the allowance of thoſe that have the right in them: and therefore we ſee under the Law, the *Maid that had made any vow, was not ſuffered to perform it, without the conſent of the Parent*, *Numb.* 30. 5. The right of the Parent was thought of force enough to cancel and make void the Obligation even of a vow, and therefore ſurely it ought to be ſo much conſidered by us as to keep us from making any ſuch, whereby that right is infringed.

Miniſtring to their wants.

15. A fourth duty to the Parent, is to aſſiſt and miniſter to them in all their wants of what kind ſoever, whether weakneſs and ſickneſs of body, decayedneſs of underſtanding, or poverty and lowneſs in eſtate; in all theſe the Child is bound, according to his ability, to relieve and aſſiſt them: for the two former, weakneſs of body, and infirmity of mind, none can doubt of the duty, when they remember how

how every Child did in his infancy receive the very ſame benefit from the Parents; the Child had then no ſtrength to ſupport, no underſtanding to guide it ſelf; the care of the Parents was fain to ſupply both theſe to it, and therefore in common gratitude, whenever either of theſe becomes the Parents caſe, as ſometimes by great age, or ſome accident both do, the Child is to perform the ſame offices back again to them. As for that of relieving their poverty, there is the very ſame Obligation to that with the former, it being but juſt to ſuſtain thy Parent who has formerly ſuſtained thee: but beſides this, Chriſt himſelf teaches us, that this is contained within the precept of honouring their Parents; for when *Mark* 7.13. he accuſes the *Phariſees* of *rejecting the Commandment of God, to cleave to their own traditions*, he inſtances in this particular concerning the relieving of Parents, whereby 'tis manifeſt that this is a part of that duty which is enjoyned in the fifth Commandment, as you may ſee at large in the Text, and ſuch a duty it is that no pretence can abſolve, or acquit us of it. How then ſhall thoſe anſwer it, that deny relief to their poor Parents, that cannot part with their own exceſſes and ſuperfluities, which are indeed their ſins, to ſatisfie the neceſſities of thoſe to whom they owe their being? Nay, ſome there are yet worſe, who out of pride ſcorn to own their Parents in their poverty: thus it often happens, when the Child is advanced to dignity or wealth, they think it a diſparagement to them to look on their Parents that remain in a low condition, it being the betraying,

ing, as they think, to the World the meanneſs of their birth: and ſo the poor Parent fares the worſe for the proſperity of his Child. This is ſuch a pride and unnaturalneſs together, as will ſurely find a ſharp vengeance from God; for if *Solomon* obſerve of Pride alone, that it is the *forerunner of deſtruction*, *Prov.* 16. 18. we may much rather conclude ſo of it, when it is thus accompanied.

Duty to be paid even to the worſt of Parents.

16. To this that hath been ſaid of the duty of Children to their Parents, I ſhall add only this; that no unkindneſs, no fault of the Parent, can acquit the Child of this duty; but as S. *Peter* tells ſervants, 1 *Pet.* 2. 18. that they *muſt be ſubject, not only to the good and gentle Maſters, but alſo to the froward*; ſo certainly it belongs to Children to perform duty, not only to the kind and virtuous, but even to the harſheſt, and wickedſt Parent. For though the gratitude due to a kind Parent, be a very forcible motive to make the Child pay his duty, yet that is not the only nor chiefeſt ground of it; that is laid in the Command of God, who requires us thus to honour our Parents. And therefore though we ſhould ſuppoſe a Parent ſo unnatural, as never to have done any thing to oblige the Child (which can hardly be imagined) yet ſtill the Command of God continues in force, and we are in conſcience of that, to perform that duty to our Parents, though none of the other tye of gratitude ſhould lye on us.

But as this is due from the child to the Parents, ſo on the other ſide, there are other things alſo due from the Parents to the Child, and that throughout the ſeveral ſtates and Ages of it. *Duty of Parents to Children.*

17. Firſt, There is the care of nouriſhing and ſuſtaining it, which begins from the very birth, and continues a duty from the Parent, till the Child be able to perform it to himſelf; this is a duty which nature teaches; even the ſavage Beaſts have a great care and tenderneſs in nouriſhing their young, and therefore may ſerve to reproach and condemn all Parents, who ſhall be ſo unnatural as to neglect this. I ſhall not here enter into the queſtion, *Whether the Mother be obliged to give the child its firſt nouriſhment, by giving it Suck her ſelf*, becauſe 'twill not be poſſible to affirm univerſally in the Caſe, there being many circumſtances which may alter it, and make it not only lawful, but beſt not to do it; all I ſhall ſay is, that where no impediment of ſickneſs, weakneſs, or the like does happen, 'tis ſurely beſt for the Mother her ſelf to perform this office, there being many advantages to the Child by it, which a good Mother ought ſo far to conſider, as not to ſell them to her own ſloth, or niceneſs, or any ſuch unworthy motive; for where ſuch only are the grounds of forbearing it, they will never be able to juſtifie the omiſſion, they being themſelves unjuſtifiable. *To nouriſh them.*

But

Bring them to Baptiſm.

But beſides this firſt care, which belongs to the body of the Child, there is another, which ſhould begin near as early, which belongs to their Souls, and that is the bringing them to the Sacrament of Baptiſm, thereby to procure them an early right to all thoſe precious advantages, which that Sacrament conveighs to them. This is a duty the Parents ought not to delay, it being moſt reaſonable that they who have been inſtruments to conveigh the ſtain and pollution of ſin to the poor Infant, ſhould be very earneſt and induſtrious to have it waſht off, as ſoon as may be: Beſides, the life of ſo tender a creature is but a blaſt, and many times gone in a moment; and though we are not to deſpair of God's mercy to thoſe poor Children, who die without Baptiſm, yet ſurely thoſe Parents commit a great fault by whoſe neglect it is that they want it.

Educate them.

18. Secondly, the Parents muſt provide for the Education of the Child; they muſt, as *Solomon* ſpeaks, *Prov.* 22. 6. *Train up the child in the way he ſhould go.* As ſoon therefore as Children come to the uſe of reaſon, they are to be inſtructed, and that firſt in thoſe things which concern their eternal well-being, they are by little and little to be taught all thoſe things which God hath commanded them as their duty to perform; as alſo what glorious rewards he hath provided for them, if they do it, and what grievous and eternal puniſhment, if they do it not. Theſe things ought as early as is poſſible, to be inſtilled into the minds of Children, which (like new veſſels)

veſſels) do uſually keep the ſavour of that which is firſt put into them; and therefore it nearly concerns all Parents to look they be at firſt thus ſeaſoned with Vertue and Religion. 'Tis ſure if this be neglected, there is one ready at hand to fill them with the contrary: the Devil will be diligent enough to inſtil into them all wickedneſs and vice, even from their cradles, and there being alſo in all our natures ſo much the greater aptneſs to evil, than to good, there is need of great care and watchfulneſs to prevent thoſe endeavours of that enemy of Souls, which can no way be, but by poſſeſſing them at firſt with good things, breeding in them a love to vertue, and a hatred of vice; that ſo when the temptations come, they may be armed againſt them. This ſurely is above all things the duty of Parents to look after, and the neglect of it is a horrible cruelty; we juſtly look upon thoſe Parents, as moſt unnatural wretches, that take away the life of their Child; but alas! that is mercy and tenderneſs, compared to this of neglecting his education, for by that he ruines his Soul, makes him miſerable eternally; and God knows, multitudes of ſuch cruel Parents there are in the World, that thus give up their Children to be poſſeſt by the Devil, for want of an early acquainting them with the ways of God; nay indeed, how few there are that do conſcionably perform this duty, is too apparent by the ſtrange rudeneſs and ignorance that is generally among youth; the Children of thoſe who call themſelves Chriſtians, being frequently as ignorant of God and Chriſt, as the meereſt Heathens. But whoever

whoever they are that thus neglect this great duty, let them know that it is not only a fearful misery they bring upon their poor Children, but also a horrible guilt upon themselves. For as God says to the careless Watchman, *Ezek.* 3.18. *That if any soul perish*, by his negligence, *that soul shall be required at his hands*; so surely will it fare with all Parents who have this office of Watchmen intrusted to them by God over their own Children. A second part of education is the bringing them up to some employment, busying them in some honest exercise, whereby they may avoid that great snare of the Devil, Idleness; and also be taught some useful Art or Trade, whereby when they come to age, they may become profitable to the Commonwealth, and able to get an honest living to themselves.

Means towards the education of Children.

19. To this great duty of Educating of Children there is required as means, first, Encouragement; secondly, Correction. Encouragement is first to be tried, we should endeavour to make children in love with duty, by offering them rewards and invitations, and whenever they do well, take notice of it, and encourage them to go on. It is an ill course some Parents hold, who think they must never appear to their Children but with a face of sowreness and austerity; this seems to be that which *S. Paul* forewarns Parents of, when he bids *fathers* not to *provoke their children to wrath*, *Col.* 3.21. To be as harsh and unkind to them, when they do well, as if they do ill, is the way to provoke them; and then the Apostle tells us

us in the ſame Verſe, what will be the iſſue of it, they will be diſcouraged, they will have no heart to go on in any good courſe, when the Parent affords them no countenance. The ſecond means is correction, and this becomes ſeaſonable, when the former will do no good, when all fair means, perſwaſions, and encouragements prevail not, then there is a neceſſity of uſing ſharper; and let that be firſt tried in words, I mean not by railing and foul language, but in ſober, yet ſharp reproof; but if that fail too, then proceed to blows; and in this caſe, as *Solomon* ſays, *He that ſpareth his rod hateth his ſon*, *Prov.* 13. 24. 'Tis a cruel fondneſs, that to ſpare a few ſtripes at preſent, will adventure him to thoſe ſad miſchiefs, which commonly befal the Child that is left to himſelf. But then this correction muſt be given in ſuch a manner, as may be likely to do good; to which purpoſe it muſt firſt be given timely; the Child muſt not be ſuffered to run on in any ill, till it hath got a habit, and a ſtubbornneſs too. This is a great error in many Parents, they will let their children alone for divers years, to do what they liſt, permit them to lie, to ſteal, without ever ſo much as rebuking them, nay, perhaps pleaſe themſelves to ſee the witty ſhifts of the Child, and think it matters not what they do while they are little: but alas! all that while the Vice gets root, and that many times ſo deep an one, that all they can do afterwards, whether by words or blows, can never pluck it up. Secondly, Correction muſt be moderate, not exceeding the quality of the fault, nor the tenderneſs of the Child. Thirdly, it muſt

muſt not be given in rage, if it be, it will not only be in danger of being immoderate, but it will loſe its effects upon the Child, who will think he is corrected, not becauſe he has done a fault, but becauſe his Parent is angry, and ſo will rather blame the Parent than himſelf; whereas on the contrary, care ſhould be taken to make the Child as ſenſible of the fault, as of the ſmart, without which he will never be throughly amended.

The Parent to watch over their Souls even when they are grown up.

20. Thirdly, after children are grown up, and are paſt the age of education, there are yet other Offices for the Parent to perform to them; the Parent is ſtill to watch over them, in reſpect of their ſouls, to obſerve how they practiſe thoſe precepts which are given them in their education, and accordingly to exhort, incourage, or reprove, as they find occaſion.

To provide for their ſubſiſtence.

21. So alſo for their outward eſtate, they are to put them into ſome courſe of living in the World; if God have bleſt the Parent with wealth, according to what he hath, he muſt diſtribute to his Children, remembring that ſince he was the inſtrument of bringing them into the World, he is, according to his ability, to provide for their comfortable living in it; they are therefore to be lookt on as very unnatural Parents, who, ſo they may have enough to ſpend in their own riots and exceſs, care not what becomes of their Children, never think of providing for them.

Another

Another fault is uſual among Parents in this buſineſs: they defer all the proviſions for them, till themſelves be dead, heap up, perhaps, great matters for them againſt that time, but in the mean time afford them not ſuch a competency, as may enable them to live in the world. There are ſeveral miſchiefs come from this: Firſt, it leſſens the child's affection to his Parent, nay, ſometimes it proceeds ſo far, as to make him wiſh his death: which though it be ſuch a fault, as no temptation can excuſe in a child, yet 'tis alſo a great fault in a Parent, to give that temptation. Secondly, it puts the child upon ſhifts, and tricks, many times diſhoneſt ones, to ſupply his neceſſities; this is, I doubt not, a common effect of it, the hardneſs of Parents has often put Men upon very unlawful courſes, which when they are once acquainted with perhaps they never leave, though the firſt occaſion ceaſe; and therefore Parents ought to beware how they run them upon thoſe hazards. Beſides, the Parent loſes that contentment, which he might have in ſeeing his children live proſperouſly and comfortably, which none but an arrant Earth-worm would exchange for the vain imaginary pleaſure of having money in his cheſt. But in this buſineſs of providing for children, there is yet another thing to be heeded, and that is, that the Parent get that wealth honeſtly, which he makes their portion; elſe 'tis very far from being a proviſion: there is ſuch a curſe goes along with an ill gotten eſtate, that he that leaves ſuch a one to his child, doth but cheat and deceive him, makes him believe he has left him wealth, but has withal put ſuch a canker in the bowels

of it, that is ſure to eat it out. This is ſo common an obſervation, that I need ſay nothing to confirm the truth of it; would God it were as generally laid to heart as it ſeems to be generally taken notice of: Then ſurely Parents would not account it a reaſonable motive to unjuſt dealing, that they may thereby provide for their children, for this is not a way of providing for them; nay, 'tis the way to ſpoil them of whatever they have lawfully gathered for them; the leaſt mite of unlawful gain being of the nature of leaven, which ſowres the whole lump, bringing down curſes upon all a Man poſſeſſeth. Let all Parents therefore ſatisfie themſelves with ſuch proviſions for their children, as God ſhall enable them honeſtly to make, aſſuring themſelves how little ſoever it be, 'tis a better portion than the greateſt wealth unjuſtly gotten; according to that of *Solomon*, *Prov.* 16. 8. *Better is a little with righteouſneſs, than great revenue without right.*

To give them good example.

22. A fourth thing the Parent owes to the child is Good Example; he is not only to ſet him rules of vertue and godlineſs, but he muſt himſelf give him a pattern in his own practice. We ſee the force of example is infinitely beyond that of precept, eſpecially where the perſon is one to whom we bear a reverence, or with whom we have a continued converſation; both which uſually meet in a Parent. It is therefore a moſt neceſſary care in all Parents to behave themſelves ſo before their children, that their example may be a means of winning them to virtue: but alas! this age affords little of this care, nay, ſo far 'tis from

from it, that there are none more frequently the inſtruments of corrupting children than their own Parents. And indeed how can it be otherwiſe? While Men give themſelves liberty to all wickedneſs, 'tis not to be hoped, but that the children which obſerve it, will imitate it; the child that ſees his Father drunk, will ſurely think he may be ſo too, as well as his Father. So he that hears him ſwear, will do the like, and ſo for all other vices; and if any Parent that is thus wicked himſelf, ſhould happen to have ſo much more care of his child's Soul than his own, as to forbid him the things which himſelf practiſes, or correct him for the doing them; 'tis certain the child will account this a great injuſtice in his father, to puniſh him for that which himſelf freely does, and ſo he is never likely to be wrought upon by it. This conſideration lays a moſt ſtrict tye upon all Parents to live Chriſtianly, for otherwiſe they do not only hazard their own Souls, but thoſe of their children alſo, and as it were, purchaſe an eſtate of inheritance in Hell.

23. A fifth duty of Parents is bleſſing their children; the way of doing that is double, firſt, by their prayer; they are by daily and earneſt prayers to commend them to God's protection and bleſſing, both for their ſpiritual and temporal eſtate; and ſecondly, by their piety; they are to be ſuch perſons themſelves as that a bleſſing may deſcend from them upon their Poſterity. This is often promiſed in Scripture to Godly men, that their *ſeed ſhall be bleſſed.* Thus in the ſecond Commandment, God promiſes *to ſhew mercy to the thouſand* *To bleſs them.*

Generation of them that love him and keep his Commandments. And it is very observable in the *Jews*, that though they were a stiff-necked generation, and had very grievously provoked God, yet the Godliness of their Forefathers, *Abraham*, *Isaac* and *Jacob*, did many times move God to save them from destruction; and on the other side we see that even good men have fared the worse for the iniquities of their fathers; thus when *Josiah* had destroyed idolatry, restored God's service, and done good beyond all the Kings that were before him, yet there was an old arrear of *Manasseh* his Grandfather, which all this piety of his would not blot out, but he resolves to cast *Judah also out of his sight*, as you may read at large, 2 *Kings* 23. If therefore Parents have any bowels, any kindness towards their children, any real desire of their prosperity, let them take care by their own godly life to entail a blessing upon them.

To give no unreasonable commands.

24. Sixthly, Parents must take heed, that they use their power over their children with equity and moderation, not to oppress them with unreasonable Commands, only to exercise their own authority, but in all things of weight to consider the real good of their children, & to press them to nothing, which may not consist with that. This is a rule whereof Parents may often have use, but in none greater than in the business of marrying their children, wherein many that otherwise are good Parents, have been to blame; when out of an eagerness of bestowing them wealthily, they force them to marry utterly against their own inclinations

ons, which is a great tyranny, and that which frequently betrays them to a multitude of miſchiefs, ſuch as all the wealth in the world cannot repair. There are two things which Parents ought eſpecially to conſider in the matching their children; the firſt, how they may live Chriſtianly; and to that purpoſe to chuſe a vertuous and pious perſon to link them with; the ſecond is, how they may live chearfully and comfortably in this world; and to that end, though a competency of eſtate may be neceſſary to be regarded, yet ſurely abundance is no way requiſite, and therefore that ſhould not be too vehemently ſought after: that which much more tends to the happineſs of that ſtate is the mutual kindneſs and liking of the parties, without which, marriage is of all other the moſt uncomfortable condition, and therefore no Parent ought to thruſt a child into it. I have now done with the firſt ſort of Relation, that of a Parent.

Oliver Ripley

SUNDAY XV.

Of duty to our Brethren, and Relations, Husband, Wife, Friends, Maſters, Servants.

Sect. 1. THE ſecond ſort of Relation is that of a Brother: now brotherhood may be twofold, either natural, or ſpiritual; the latter may in the largeſt extent contain under it all Mankind, all that partake of the ſame nature; but I ſhall not conſider it ſo in this place, having already mentioned thoſe general duties which belong to all as ſuch. I now ſpeak of that natural brotherhood that is between thoſe that are the children of the ſame immediate Parent; and the duty of theſe is to have united hearts and affections: this nature points out to them, they partaking in a more eſpecial manner of each others ſubſtance, and therefore ought to have the greateſt tenderneſs and kindneſs, each to other; thus we ſee *Abraham* makes it an argument, why there ſhould be *no contention between him and Lot, becauſe they were brethren*, *Gen.* 13. 8. and though by brethren there is meant only couſins, yet that helps the more ſtrongly to conclude, that this nearer

Dues to Brethren.

Natural.

nearer relation is in reaſon to be a greater bar to ſtrife, as alſo that this kindneſs is in ſome degree to be extended to all that have any nearneſs of bloud to us.

The neceſſity of Love among Brethren.

2. This kindneſs and Love between Brethren and Siſters ought to be very firmly grounded in their hearts; if it be not, they will be of all others in moſt danger of diſagreeing; for the continual converſation that is amongſt them whilſt they are at home in the fathers houſe will be apt to miniſter ſome occaſion of jar. Beſides, the equality that is among them in reſpect of birth, often makes them inclinable to envy each other, when one is in any reſpect advanced above the other. Thus we ſee *Joſeph*'s brethren envied him, becauſe he had moſt of his Father's love, and *Rachel* envied her Siſter *Leah*, becauſe ſhe was fruitful; therefore for the preventing of ſuch temptations, let all who have brethren and ſiſters, poſſeſs their mind with a great and real kindneſs to them, look on them as parts of themſelves, and then they will never think fit either to quarrel with them, or to envy them any advantage, any more than one part of the body does another of the ſame body, but will ſtrive to advance and help forward the good of each other.

Spiritual brotherhood.

3. The ſecond kind of Brotherhood is ſpiritual; that contains all thoſe who profeſs the ſame Faith with us: the Church in our Baptiſm becomes a Mother to each baptized perſon; and then ſurely they that have the relation of

children to her, must have also the relation of brethren to each other; and to this sort of brethren also we owe a great deal of tenderness and affection; the spiritual bond of Religion should, of all others, the most closely unite our hearts. This is the Brotherhood which *S. Peter* exhorts us to love, 1 *Pet.* 2. 17. And to it we are in an especial manner bound to do all good offices, *Do good*, saith the Apostle, *to all, but especially to them that are of the household of Faith*, *Gal.* 6. 10. Our compassions are to be most melting towards them of all others, in all their needs; Christ tells us, that *whosoever gives but a cup of cold water to any in the name of a Disciple, shall not lose his reward*, *Matth.* 10. 42. From whence we may assure our selves that this peculiar love to Christians as Christians, is very acceptable in his sight.

Our duty to hold communion with these brethren.

4. Several duties there are required of us to these brethren: one principal, is the holding Communion with them, and that first in Doctrine: we are constantly to continue in the belief and profession of all those necessary truths, by which we may be mark'd out as followers and Disciples of Christ. This is that faith which *S. Jude* speaks of, which was *once delivered to the Saints*, *Jude* 3. by keeping whereof we continue still united to this spiritual brotherhood, in respect of profession, which we must constantly do, what storms and persecutions soever attend it, according to the exhortation of the Apostle. *Heb.* 10. 22. *Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering.* Secondly, we are also, as opportunity

portunity ſerves, to communicate with them in all holy offices; we muſt be diligent in frequenting the aſſemblies of the Saints, which is as it were the badg of our profeſſion, and therefore he that willingly withdraws himſelf from theſe, gives ground to ſuſpect he will be apt to renounce the other alſo. But theſe parts of communion we find ſtrictly maintained by the firſt Chriſtians, *Acts* 2. 42. *They continued ſtedfaſtly in the Apoſtles doctrine and fellowſhip, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.* They continued, and that ſtedfaſtly, they were not frighted from it by any perſecutions, though that were a time wherein they were tried with the ſharpeſt ſufferings; which may teach us that it is not the danger that attends this duty can acquit us of it.

To bear with their Infirmities.

5. Secondly, We are to bear with the infirmities of our Chriſtian brethren, according to the advice of S. *Paul*, *Rom.* 15. 1. *We that are ſtrong ought to bear the infirmities of the weak.* If one that holds all neceſſary Chriſtian truths, happen yet to be in ſome error, we are not for this, either to forſake his communion, or deſpiſe his perſon. This S. *Paul* teaches us in the caſe of that weak brother, *who by error made a cauſleſs ſcruple about meats*, *Rom.* 14. where he bids the ſtronger Chriſtians, that is, thoſe who being better inſtructed, diſcerned him to be in an error, yet to receive him nevertheleſs, and not to deſpiſe him; as on the other ſide, he bids that weak one not to judge the ſtronger. The leſſer differences in opinion muſt be born with on both

ſides, and muſt not in the leaſt abate our brotherly charity towards each other.

To reſtore them after falls.

6. Thirdly, We are to endeavour the reſtoring of any fallen brother, that is, to bring him to repentance, after he hath fallen into any ſin. Thus S. *Paul* commands the *Galatians*, that they ſhould *reſtore him that was overtaken in a fault, conſidering themſelves leſt they were alſo tempted.* We are not to look on him as a caſt-away, to give him over as utterly deſperate, neither are we to triumph over him, in reſpect of our own innocence, like the proud *Phariſee* over the poor *Publican*, *Luke* 18.11. but we are meekly to endeavour his recovery, remembring that our own frailty is ſuch, that we are not ſecure from the like falls.

To ſympathize with them.

7. Fourthly, We are to have a Sympathy and fellow-feeling with theſe brethren, to be nearly toucht with whatſoever befals them, either as they are conſidered in ſociety or in ſingle perſons. In ſociety firſt, and ſo they make up a Church; and that either the univerſal, which is made up of all Believers throughout the World, or any particular Church, which is made up of all the Believers in that particular Nation; and whatever happens to either of theſe, either the whole Church in general, or any ſuch ſingle part of it, eſpecially that whereof our ſelves are members, we are to be much affected and moved with it, to rejoyce in all the proſperities, and to mourn and bewail all the breaches and deſolations thereof, and daily

daily and earneſtly to pray with *David*, Pſal. 51. 18. *O be favourable and gracious unto* Sion, *build thou the walls of* Jeruſalem; and that eſpecially when we ſee her in diſtreſs, and perſecution. Whoſoever is not thus toucht with the condition of the Church, is not to be lookt on as a living member of it; for as in the natural body every member is concerned in the proſperity of the whole, ſo certainly 'tis here; It was the obſervation of the Pſalmiſt, that *God's ſervants think upon the ſtones of* Sion, *and pity to ſee her in the duſt*, *Pſalm* 102. 14. and ſurely all his ſervants are ſtill of the ſame temper, cannot look on the ruines and deſolations of the Church, without the greateſt ſorrow, and lamentation. Secondly, we are to have this fellow-feeling with our brethren, conſidered as ſingle perſons; We are to account our ſelves concerned in every particular Chriſtian, ſo as to partake with him in all his occaſions either of joy or ſorrow. Thus the Apoſtle exhorts, *Rom.* 12. 14. *Rejoyce with them that rejoyce, weep with them that weep:* And again, 1 *Cor.* 12. under the ſimilitude of the natural body he urges this duty, *Whether one member ſuffer, all the members ſuffer with it; or one member be honoured, all the members rejoyce with it.* All theſe ſeveral effects of love, we owe to theſe ſpiritual brethren. And this love is that, which Chriſt hath made the badg of his Diſciples, *John* 13. 35. *By this ſhall all men know that ye are my diſciples, if ye have love one to another*; ſo that if we mean not to caſt off diſcipleſhip to Chriſt, we muſt not forſake this love of the brethren.

8. The

The wife owes to the Husband obedience.

8. The third relation is that between Husband and Wife: This is yet much nearer than either of the former, as appears by that Text, *Epheſ.* 5. 31. *A man ſhall leave Father and Mother, and cleave to his Wife, and they two ſhall be one fleſh.* Several duties there are owing from one of theſe perſons to the other: and firſt for the Wife, ſhe owes obedience. This is commanded by the Apoſtle, *Col.* 3. 18. *Wives ſubmit your ſelves to your own Husbands, as it is fit in the Lord.* They are to render obedience to their Husbands in the Lord, that is, in all lawful commands, for otherwiſe 'tis here, as in the caſe of all other ſuperiours, God muſt be obeyed rather than Man, and the Wife muſt not upon her Husband's command do any thing which is forbidden by God. But in all things which do not croſs ſome command of God's, this precept is of force, and will ſerve to condemn the peeviſh ſtubbornneſs of many wives who reſiſt the lawful commands of their husband, only becauſe they are impatient of this duty of ſubjection, which God himſelf requires of them. But it may here be asked, What if the Husband command ſomething, which though it be not unlawful. is yet very inconvenient, and imprudent, muſt the wife ſubmit to ſuch a command? To this I anſwer, that it will be no diſobedience in her, but duty, calmly and mildly to ſhew him the inconveniences thereof, and to perſwade him to retract that command: but in caſe ſhe cannot win him to it by fair intreaties, ſhe muſt neither try ſharp language,

nor

nor yet finally refuſe to obey, nothing but the unlawfulneſs of the command being ſufficient warrant for that.

9. Secondly, The wife owes Fidelity to the husband, and that of two ſorts; firſt, that of the bed, ſhe muſt keep her ſelf pure and chaſt from all ſtrange embraces, and therefore muſt not ſo much as give an ear to any that would allure her, but with the greateſt abhorrence reject all motions of that ſort, and never give any Man that has once made ſuch a motion to her, the leaſt opportunity to make a ſecond. Secondly, She owes him likewiſe Fidelity in the managing thoſe worldly affairs he commits to her, ſhe muſt order them ſo, as may be moſt to her husband's advantage; and not by deceiving and couzening of him employ his goods to ſuch uſes as he allows not of. *Fidelity.*

10. Thirdly, She owes him Love, and together with that all friendlineſs and kindneſs of converſation: ſhe is to endeavour to bring him as much aſſiſtance, and comfort of life, as is poſſible, that ſo ſhe may anſwer that ſpecial end of the woman's creation, the being *a help to her husband*, *Gen.* 2. 13. and this in all conditions, whether health or ſickneſs, wealth or poverty, whatſoever eſtate God by his providence ſhall caſt him into, ſhe muſt be as much of comfort and ſupport to him, as ſhe can. To this all ſullenneſs and harſhneſs, all brawling and unquietneſs is directly contrary, for that makes the wife the burden and plague of the man, inſtead of a help and comfort: And *Love.*

ſure

ſure if it be a fault to behave ones ſelf ſo to any perſon, as hath already been ſhewed, how great muſt it be to do ſo to him, to whom the greateſt kindneſs and affection is owing?

The faults of the Husband acquit not from theſe duties.

11. Nor let ſuch wives think that any faults, or provocations of the Husband can juſtifie their frowardneſs; for they will not, either in reſpect of religion or diſcretion. Not in Religion, for where God has abſolutely commanded a duty to be paid, 'tis not any unworthineſs of the perſon can excuſe from it; nor in Diſcretion, for the worſe a Husband is, the more need there is for the wife to carry her ſelf with that gentleneſs and ſweetneſs, that may be moſt likely to win him. This is the advice Saint *Peter* gave the Wives of his time, 1 *Pet.* 3. 1. *Likewiſe ye wives be in ſubjection to your own huſbands, that if any obey not the word, they may without the word be won by the converſation of the wives.* It ſeems the good behaviour of the Wives was thought a powerful means to win Men from Heatheniſm to Chriſtianity; and ſure it might now a-days have ſome good effects, if women would have but the patience to try it: At the leaſt, 'twould have this, that it would keep ſome tolerable quiet in Families, whereas on the other ſide, the ill fruits of the wives unquietneſs are ſo notorious, that there are few neighbourhoods, but can give ſome inſtance of it. How many men are there, that to avoid the noiſe of a froward Wife, have fallen to company-keeping, and by that to drunkenneſs, poverty, and a multitude

multitude of miſchiefs? Let all Wives therefore beware of adminiſtring that temptation. But whenever there happens any thing, which, in kindneſs to her husband, ſhe is to admoniſh him of, let it be with that ſoftneſs and mildneſs, that it may appear 'tis love, and not anger that makes her ſpeak.

12. There are alſo on the Husbands part ſeveral duties; there is firſt Love, which S. *Paul* requires to be very tender and compaſſionate towards the wife, as appears by the ſimilitudes he uſeth in that matter, *Epheſ.* 5. The one, that of the love a man bears to his natural body. *No man*, ſays he, Verſe 29. *ever hateth his own fleſh but nouriſheth it, and cheriſheth it.* The other love is that Chriſt bears to his Church; which is far greater, Verſe 25. both which he ſets as patterns of this love of Husbands towards their Wives. This utterly forbids all harſhneſs and roughneſs to them; Men are to uſe them as parts of themſelves, to love them as their own bodies, and therefore to do nothing that may be hurtful and grievous to them, no more than they would cut and gaſh their own fleſh. Let thoſe husbands that tyrannize over their wives, that ſcarce uſe them like humane creatures, conſider whether that be to love them as their own bodies. *The Husband owes to the wife love.*

13. A ſecond duty of the Husband, is Faithfulneſs to the Bed. This is by God as well required of the Husband, as the Wife; and though the world do ſeem to look on the breach of *Faithfulneſs.*

of this duty with leſs abhorrence in the Husband, yet ſure before that juſt Judge, the offence will appear no leſs on the Man's ſide, than the Woman's. This is certain, 'tis in both a breach of the vow made to each other at their Marriage, and ſo beſides the uncleanneſs, a down-right perjury, and thoſe differences in the caſe, which ſeem to caſt the ſcale, or rather in reſpect of civil and worldly conſideration, than meerly of the ſin.

Maintenance. 14. A third part of the Husband is to maintain and provide for the Wife. He is to let her partake with him in thoſe outward good things, wherewith God hath bleſt him, and neither by niggardlineſs debar her of what is fit for her, nor yet by unthriftineſs ſo waſte his goods, that he ſhall become unable to ſupport her. This is certainly the duty of the Husband, who being as hath been ſaid, to account his wife as a part of his own body, muſt have the very ſame care to ſuſtain her, that he hath for himſelf. Yet this is not ſo to be underſtood, as to excuſe the wife from her part of labour and induſtry, when that is requiſite, it being unreaſonable the husband ſhould toil to maintain the wife in idleneſs.

Inſtruction. 15. Fourthly, The husband is to inſtruct the wife, in the things which concern her eternal welfare, if ſhe be ignorant of them. Thus S. *Paul* bids the *wives learn of their husbands at home*, 1 *Cor.* 14. 36. which ſuppoſes that the husband is to teach her. Indeed it belongs to every Maſter of a Family to endeavour that all under his charge be taught

taught all neceſſary things of this kind, and then ſure more eſpecially his wife, who is ſo much nearer to him than all the reſt. This ſhould make men careful to get knowledge themſelves, that ſo they may be able to perform this duty they owe to others.

Husbands and Wives mutually to pray for, and aſſiſt each other in all good.

16. Laſtly, Husbands and Wives are mutually to pray for each other, to beg all bleſſings from God both ſpiritual and temporal, and to endeavour all they can to do all good to one another, eſpecially all good to each others Souls, by ſtirring up to the performance of duty, and diſſwading and drawing back from all ſin, and by being like true yoke-fellows, helpful and aſſiſtant to each other in the doing of all ſorts of Good, both to their own Family and all others within their reach. This is of all other the trueſt and moſt valuable love. Nay, indeed, how can it be ſaid they do love at all, who contentedly let each other run on in a courſe that will bring them to eternal miſery? And if the love of Husbands and Wives were thus grounded in Vertue and Religion, 'twould make their lives a kind of Heaven on Earth; 'twould prevent all thoſe contentions and brawlings, ſo common among them, which are the great plagues of Families, and the leſſer Hell in paſſage to the greater; and truly where it is not thus founded, there is little comfort to be expected in marriage.

17. It

The vertue of the perſon the chief conſideration in Marriage.

17. It ſhould therefore be the care of every one that means to enter upon that ſtate, to conſider adviſedly beforehand, and to chuſe ſuch a perſon with whom they may have this ſpiritual friendſhip, that is, ſuch a one, as truly fears God. There are many falſe ends of Marriage lookt upon in the world: ſome marry for Wealth, others for Beauty, and generally they are only worldly reſpects that are at all conſidered; but certainly he that would marry as he ought, ſhould contrive to make his Marriage uſeful to thoſe better ends of ſerving God, and ſaving his own Soul; at leaſt he muſt be ſure it be no hindrance to them, and to that purpoſe the vertue of the perſon choſen is more conducing than all the wealth in the world, though I deny not, but that a competency of that may likewiſe be conſidered.

Unlawful Marriages.

18. But above all things let all take heed, that they make not ſuch marriages, as may not only be ill in their effects, but are actual ſins at the time; ſuch are the marriages of thoſe that were formerly promiſed to ſome other, in which caſe 'tis ſure they rightly belong to thoſe, to whom they paſt the firſt promiſe; and then for any other to marry them, during the life of that perſon, is to take the huſband or wife of that other, which is direct adultery, as S. *Paul* tells us, *Rom.* 7. 3. The like unlawfulneſs there is alſo in the marriage of thoſe, who are within thoſe degrees of kindred forbidden

forbidden by God, the particulars whereof are ſet down in the 18. and 20. of *Levit.* and whoever marries any that is within any of thoſe degrees of nearneſs, either to himſelf, or to his deceaſed Wife, which is as bad, commits that great ſin of Inceſt, and ſo long as he continues to live with ſuch his unlawful wife, remains in that fearful guilt. This warineſs in the choice of the perſon to be married, would prevent many ſad effects, which we daily ſee follow ſuch raſh or unlawful matches. It were well therefore if People would look on marriage, as our Church adviſes, as a thing not to be *undertaken lightly, unadviſedly, or wantonly, to ſatisfie mens carnal luſts and appetites; but reverently, diſcreetly, adviſedly, ſoberly, and in the fear of God*; and in ſo doing, no doubt, a bleſſing would follow, which otherwiſe there is little ground to expect. I have now done with this Relation between Husband and Wife.

19. The next is that between Friends; and this relation if it be rightly founded, is of great nearneſs and uſefulneſs; but there is none more generally miſtaken in the world; Men uſually call them their friends, with whom they have an intimacy and frequency of converſation, though that intimacy be indeed nothing but an agreement and combination in ſin. The Drunkard thinks him his friend that will keep him company; the deceitful Perſon, him that will aid him in his cheats; the proud Man, him that will flatter him: And ſo generally in all vices, they are look'd on as friends that advance and *Friendſhip.*

and further us in them. But God knows this is far from friendſhip; ſuch a friend as this, the Devil himſelf is in the higheſt degree, who is never backward in ſuch offices. The true friendſhip is that of a direct contrary making; 'tis a concurrence and agreement in vertue, not in vice: in ſhort, a true friend loves his friend ſo, that he is very zealous of his good; and certainly he that is really ſo, will never be the inſtrument of bringing him to the greateſt evil. The general duty of a friend then muſt be reſolved to be the induſtrious purſuit of his friend's real advantages, in which there are ſeveral particulars contained.

Its duties.

20. As firſt faithfulneſs in all truſts committed to him by his friend, whether that of goods, or ſecrets; he that betrays the truſt of a friend in either, is by all men lookt upon with abhorrence, it being one of the higheſt falſeneſſes and treacheries, and for ſuch treacherous wounds the Wiſe man tells us, *Every friend will depart*, Eccluſ. 22. 22.

Faithfulneſs.

21. Secondly, 'tis the duty of a Friend to be aſſiſting to his friend in all his outward needs; to counſel him when he wants advice: to chear him when he needs comfort: to give him when he wants relief: and to endeavour his reſcue out of any trouble or danger. An admirable example we have of this friendſhip in *Jonathan* to *David*, *he loved him as his own ſoul*, and we ſee he noto nly contrives for his ſafety when he was in danger,

Aſſiſtance.

danger, but runs hazards himſelf to reſcue and deliver his friend, draws his father's anger upon him, to turn it from *David*, as you may read at large, 1 *Sam.* 20.

22. The third and higheſt duty of a friend is to be aiding and aſſiſting to the ſoul of his friend, to endeavour to advance that in piety and vertue by all means within his power, by exhortations and incouragements to all vertue, by earneſt and vehement diſſwaſions from all ſin, and not only thus in general, but by applying to his particular wants, eſpecially by plain and friendly reproofs, where he knows or reaſonably believes there is any fault committed. This is of all others the moſt peculiar duty of a friend, it being indeed that which none elſe is qualified for. Such an unwillingneſs there is in moſt men to hear of their faults, that thoſe that undertake that work, had need have a great prepoſſeſſion of their hearts, to make them patient of it. Nay, it is ſo generally acknowledged to be the proper work of a friend, that if he omit it, he betrays the offender into ſecurity; his not reproving will be apt to make the other think he does nothing worthy of reproof, and ſo he tacitly acts that baſeſt part of a flatterer, ſooths and cheriſhes him in his ſin. When yet farther it is conſidered how great need all men have at ſome time or other of being admoniſhed, 'twill appear a moſt unfriendly, yea, a cruel thing to omit it. We have that natural partiality to our ſelves, that we cannot ſo readily diſcern our own miſcarriages, as we do other mens, and therefore *Admonition.*

'tis

'tis very neceſſary they ſhould ſometimes be ſhewed us by thoſe, who ſee them more clearly; and the doing this at the firſt may prevent the multiplying of more: whereas if we be ſuffered to go unreproved, it often comes to ſuch a habit, that reproofs will do no good. And then how ſhall that perſon be able to anſwer it either to God or himſelf, that has by his ſilence betrayed his friend to this greateſt miſchief? 'Tis the expreſſion of God himſelf ſpeaking of a friend, *Thy friend which is as thine own ſoul, Deut.* 13. 6. And ſure we ſhould in this reſpect account our friends as our own ſouls, by having the ſame jealous tenderneſs and watchfulneſs over their ſouls, which we ought to have of our own. It will therefore be very fit for all that have entred any ſtrict friendſhip, to make this one ſpecial article in the agreement, that they ſhall mutually admoniſh and reprove each other; by which means it will become ſuch an avowed part of their friendſhip, that it can never be miſtaken by the reproved party for cenſoriouſneſs or unkindneſs.

Prayer. 23. Fourthly, to theſe ſeveral parts of kindneſs muſt be added that of Prayer; we muſt not only aſſiſt our friends, our ſelves, in what we can, but we muſt call in the Almighties aid to them, recommending them earneſtly to God for all his bleſſings, both temporal and ſpiritual.

Conſtancy. 24. Laſtly, We muſt be conſtant in our friendſhips, and not out of a lightneſs of humour grow weary of a friend, only becauſe we have had him long.

This

This is great injuſtice to him, who, if he have behaved himſelf well, ought the more to be valued, by how much the longer he has continued to do ſo: and it is great folly in our ſelves, for it is the caſting away the greateſt treaſure of humane life, for ſuch certainly is a tried friend. The wiſeſt of Men gives warning of it, *Prov.* 27. 16. *Thine own friend, and thy fathers friend forſake not.* Nay, farther, 'tis not every light offence of a friend, that ſhould make thee renounce his friendſhip, there muſt be ſome allowance made to the infirmities of Men, and if thou haſt occaſion to pardon him ſomewhat to day, perhaps thou mayeſt give him opportunity to requite thee to morrow; therefore nothing but unfaithfulneſs, or incorrigible vice ſhould break this band.

Servants owe to their Maſters obedience.

25. The laſt relation is that between Maſters and Servants, both which owe duty to each other. That of the ſervant is firſt obedience to all lawful commands; this is expreſly required by the Apoſtle, *Epheſ.* 6. 6. *Servants obey in all things your Maſters*, &c. And this obedience muſt not be a grumbling and unwilling one, but ready and chearful, as he there proceeds to exhort, Verſe 7. *with good will doing ſervice*; and to help them herein, they are to conſider, that it is to the Lord, and not unto Men. God has commanded ſervants thus to obey their Maſters; and therefore the obedience they pay is to God, which may well make them do it chearfully, how harſh or unworthy ſoever the Maſter be, eſpecially

eſpecially if what the Apoſtle farther urgeth, verſe 8. be conſidered, *That there is a reward to be expected from God for it.*

Fidelity.

26. The ſecond duty of the Servant is faithfulneſs, and that may be of two ſorts; one as oppoſed to eye-ſervice, the other to purloyning or defrauding. The firſt part of faithfulneſs is the doing of all true ſervice to his Maſter, not only when his eye is over him, and he expects puniſhment for the omiſſion, but at all times, even when his Maſter is not likely to diſcern his failing; and that ſervant that doth not make conſcience of this, is far from being a faithful ſervant, this eye-ſervice being by the Apoſtle ſet oppoſite to that ſingleneſs of heart, which he requires of ſervants, *Epheſ.* 6. 5. The ſecond ſort of faithfulneſs conſiſts in the honeſt managery of all things intruſted to him by his Maſter, the not waſting his goods (as the unjuſt Steward was accuſed to have done, *Luke* 16.) whether by careleſs embezelling of them, or by converting any of them to his own uſe without the allowance of his Maſter. This latter is that purloining of which the Apoſtle warns ſervants, *Tit.* 2. 10. and is indeed no better than arrant theft; of this kind are all thoſe ways, that the ſervant hath of gaining to himſelf, by the loſs and damage of his Maſter, as the being bribed to make ill bargains for him and many the like: Nay, indeed this ſort of unfaithfulneſs is worſe than common theft, by how much there is a greater truſt repoſed, the betraying whereof adds to the crime. As for the other ſort of unfaithfulneſs, that of waſting

wasting though without gain to themselves, it differs not much in effect from this, the Master may lose as much by the one as the other, and then what odds is it to him, whether he be robb'd by the covetousness or negligence of his Servant? And it is still the same breach of trust with the former; for every Master is supposed to intrust his affairs as well to the care as the honesty of his servant: for 'twould be little advantage to the Master to be secured that his servant would not himself cheat him, whilst in the mean time he would by his carelessness give opportunity to others to do it: therefore he that does not carefully look to his Master's profit, deceives his trust, as well as he that unjustly provides for his own.

Submission to rebuke.

27 A third duty of a servant is patience and meekness under the reproofs of his Master, *not answering again*, as the Apostle exhorts, *Tit.* 2. 9. that is, not making such surly and rude replies, as may increase the Master's displeasure, a thing too frequent among servants, even in the justest reprehensions; whereas *S. Peter* directs them patiently to suffer even the most undeserved correction, even when they *do well and suffer for it*, 1 *Pet.* 2. 20. But the patient suffering of rebuke is not all that is required of servants in this matter, they must also mend the fault they are rebuked for, and not think they have done enough, when they have (though never so dutifully) given the Master the hearing.

28. A fourth duty of a ſervant is Diligence: he muſt conſtantly attend to all thoſe things, which are the duties of his place, and not give himſelf to idleneſs and ſloth, nor yet to company-keeping, gaming, or any other diſorderly courſe, which may take him off from his Maſter's buſineſs. All theſe are neceſſary duties of a ſervant, which they are carefully and conſcionably to perform, not ſo much to eſcape the Maſter's anger as God's, who will certainly call every one of them to an account, how they have behaved themſelves towards their earthly Maſters.

Diligence.

29. Now on the other ſide there are ſome things alſo owing from the Maſters to their ſervants: As firſt the Maſter is bound to be juſt to them, in performing thoſe conditions on which they were hired: ſuch are commonly the giving them food and wages, and that Maſter that withholds theſe, is an oppreſſor.

Maſters owe to their Servants Juſtice.

30. Secondly, The Maſter is to admoniſh and reprove the Servant in caſe of fault, and that not only in faults againſt them, wherein few Maſters are backward; but alſo and more eſpecially in faults againſt God, whereat every Maſter ought to be more troubled than at thoſe which tend only to his own loſs, or inconvenience; the diſhonour of God, and the hazard of the meaneſt Man's Soul, being infinitely more worthy or diſquiet, than any thing of the other kind can be. And therefore when Maſters are preſently

Admonition.

preſently on fire for any little negligence or fault of a ſervant towards themſelves, and yet can without trouble ſee them run into the greateſt ſins againſt God, 'tis a ſign they conſider their own concernments too much, and God's glory and their Servants ſouls too little. This is too commonly the temper of Maſters, they are generally careleſs how their ſervants behave themſelves towards God, how diſordered and prophane their families are, and therefore never beſtow any exhortation, or admonition to perſwade them to vertue, or draw them from vice; ſuch Maſters forget that they muſt one day give an account how they have governed their families. It is certainly the duty of every Ruler to endeavour to advance Piety and Godlineſs among all thoſe that are under his charge, and that as well in this leſſer dominion of a family, as in the greater of a Realm or Nation. Of this *David* was ſo careful, that we ſee he profeſſes, *Pſalm* 101. 7. *That no deceitful perſon ſhould dwell in his houſe, that he that told lies ſhould not tarry in his ſight*; ſo much he thought himſelf bound to provide, that his family might be a kind of Church, an aſſembly of godly upright perſons: and if all Maſters would endeavour to have theirs ſo, they would beſides the eternal reward of it hereafter, find a preſent benefit by it, their worldly buſineſs would thrive much the better; for if their ſervants were brought to make conſcience of their ways, they would then not dare either to be negligent or falſe.

31. But as it is the duty of Maſters to admoniſh and reprove their ſervants, ſo they muſt

alſo look to do it in a due manner, that is, ſo as may be moſt likely to do good, not in paſſion and rage, which can never work the ſervant to any thing but the deſpiſing or hating him; but with ſuch ſober and grave ſpeeches, as may convince him of his fault, and may alſo aſſure him, that it is a kind deſire of his amendment (and not a willingneſs to wreck his own rage) which makes the Maſter thus to rebuke him.

Good example.

32. A third duty of the Maſter is to ſet a good example of honeſty and godlineſs to his ſervants, without which 'tis not all the exhortations or reproofs he can uſe, will ever do good; or elſe he pulls down more with his example, than 'tis poſſible for him to build with the other; and 'tis madneſs for a drunken, or profane Maſter to expect a ſober and godly Family.

Means of Inſtruction.

33. Fourthly, The Maſter is to provide that his ſervants may not want means of being inſtructed in their duty, as alſo that they may daily have conſtant times of worſhipping God publickly, by having prayers in the family: but of this I have ſpoken before under the head of Prayer, and therefore ſhall here ſay no more of it.

Moderation in Command.

34. Fifthly, The Maſter in all affairs of his own, is to give reaſonable and moderate Commands, not laying greater burthens on his ſervants than they are able to bear, particularly not requiring ſo much work, that they ſhall have no time to beſtow on their ſouls;

as

as on the other ſide he is not to permit them to live ſo idly as may make them either uſeleſs to him, or may betray themſelves to any ill.

35. Sixthly, The Maſter is to give his ſervants encouragement in well-doing, by uſing them with that bounty and kindneſs which their faithfulneſs, and diligence, and piety deſerves; and finally in all his dealing with them, he is to remember that himſelf hath, as the Apoſtle ſaith, *Eph. 6. 9. a Maſter in heaven*, to whom he muſt give an account of the uſage of his meaneſt ſervant on Earth. Thus have I briefly run through thoſe ſeveral relations, to which we owe particular Duty, and ſo have done with that firſt branch of Duty to our Neighbours, that of Juſtice.

Encouragement in well doing.

SUNDAY XVI.

Other Branches of our Duty to our Neighbour. Of Charity to mens Souls, Bodies, Goods and Credit.

Sect. 1. THE ſecond braneh of Duty to our Neighbours, is Charity, or Love. This is the great Goſpel-duty ſo often enjoyned us by Chriſt; the *New Commandment*, as himſelf calls it, *John*

Charity.

13. 34. *that ye love one another*, and this is again repeated twice in one Chapter, *John* 15. 12, 17. and the first Epistle of S. *John* is almost wholly spent in the perswasion of this one duty, by which we may see it is no matter of indifference, but most strictly required of all that profess Christ. Indeed himself has given it as the badge and livery of his Disciples, *John* 13. 35. *By this shall all men know ye are my Disciples, if ye have love one to another.*

In the Affections.

This Charity may be considered two ways; first, in respect of the Affections; secondly, of the Actions. Charity in the affections is a sincere kindness, which disposes us to wish all good to others, and that in all their capacities, in the same manner that justice obliges us to wish no hurt to any Man, in respect either of his Soul, his Body, his Goods, or his Credit; so this first part of Charity binds us to wish all good to them in all these.

To mens Souls.

And first for the Soul. If we have any the least spark of Charity, we cannot but wish all good to Mens Souls; those precious things which Christ thought worth the ransoming with his own bloud, may surely well challenge our kindness and good wishes; and therefore if we do not thus love one another, we are far from obeying that Command of loving as he hath loved; for 'twas the Souls of Men which he loved so tenderly, and both did and suffered so much for. Of this love of his to Souls there are two great and special effects: the first, the purifying

rifying them here by his grace, the ſecond, the making them everlaſtingly happy in his glory; and both theſe we are ſo far to copy out in our kindneſs, as to be earneſtly deſirous that all Men ſhould arrive to that purity and holineſs here, which may make them capable of eternal happineſs hereafter. It were to be hoped, that none, that himſelf carried a Soul about him, could be ſo cruel to that of another Man's, as not ſincerely to wiſh this, did not experience ſhew us, there are ſome perſons, whoſe malice is ſo deviliſh, as to reach even to the direct contrary; the wiſhing not only the ſin, but the damnation of others. Thus may you have ſome, who, in any injury or oppreſſion they ſuffer, make it their only comfort, that their enemies will damn themſelves by it; when alas! that ſhould to a Chriſtian be much more terrible, than any ſuffering they could bring upon him. He that is of this temper, is a Diſciple of Satan, not of Chriſt, it being directly contrary to the whole ſcope of that grand Chriſtian precept, of *loving our neighbours as our ſelves*. For it is ſure, no Man that believes there is ſuch a thing as damnation, wiſhes it to himſelf; be he never ſo fond of the ways that lead to it, yet he wiſhes that may not be his journeys end; and therefore by that rule of Charity ſhould as much dread it for his Neighbour.

Secondly, We are to wiſh all good to the Bodies of Men, all health and welfare; we are generally tender enough of our own bodies, dread the leaſt pain or ill,

To their Bodies, Goods and Credit.

ill, that can befall them: Now Charity, by vertue of the forementioned precept, extends this tenderneſs to all others: and whatever we apprehend as grievous to our ſelves, we muſt be unwilling ſhould befal another. The like is to be ſaid of the other two, goods and credit, that as we wiſh our own thriving and reputation, ſo we ſhould likewiſe that of others, or elſe we can never be ſaid to *love our neighbour as our ſelves.*

Effects of this Charity.

This Charity of the affections, if it be ſincere, will certainly have theſe ſeveral effects, which are ſo inſeparable from it, that they are often in Scripture accounted as parts of the duty, and ſo moſt ſtrictly required of us; First, it will keep the mind in a peaceable and meek temper towards others, ſo far from ſeeking occaſion of contentions, that no provocation ſhall draw us to it; for where we have kindneſs we ſhall be unapt to quarrel, it being one of the ſpecial qualities of Charity, that it is *not eaſily provoked*, 1 *Cor.* 13. 5. And therefore whoever is unpeaceable, ſhews his heart is deſtitute of this Charity. Secondly, it will breed compaſſion towards all the miſeries of others; every miſhap that befals where we wiſh well, is a kind of defeat and diſaſter to our ſelves; and therefore if we wiſh well to all, we ſhall be thus concern'd in the calamities of all, have a real grief and ſorrow to ſee any in miſery, and that according to the proportion of the ſuffering. Thirdly, it will give us joy in the proſperities of others. *Solomon* obſerves, *Prov.* 13. 19.

19. that *the deſire accompliſht is ſweet to the Soul*; and then whoever hath this real deſire of his neighbour's welfare, his deſire is accompliſhed in their proſperity, and therefore he cannot but have contentment and ſatisfaction in it. Both theſe are together commanded by *S. Paul*, Rom. 12. 12. *Rejoyce with them that rejoyce, weep with them that weep.* Fourthly, it will excite and ſtir up our prayers for others; we are of our ſelves impotent feeble creatures, unable to beſtow bleſſings where we moſt wiſh them; therefore if we do indeed deſire the good of others, we muſt ſeek it on their behalf from him, whence every *good and perfect gift cometh*, James 1. 17. This is ſo neceſſary a part of Charity, that without it our kindneſs is but an inſignificant thing, a kind of empty complement. For how can he be believed to wiſh well in earneſt, who will not thus put life and efficacy into his wiſhes by forming them into prayers, which will otherwiſe be vain and fruitleſs? the Apoſtle thought not fit to leave Men to their bare wiſhes, but exhorts that ſupplications, prayers and giving of thanks *be made for all men*, 1 *Tim.* 2. 1. which precept all that have this true charity of the heart will readily conform to. Theſe ſeverals are ſo naturally the fruits of this Charity, that it is a deceit for any Man to perſwade himſelf he hath it, who cannot produce theſe fruits to evidence it by.

It caſts out Envy.

But there is yet a farther excellency of this grace; it guards the mind, and ſecures it from ſeveral great and dangerous vices; as firſt

from Envy: this is by the Apoſtle taught us to be the property of Charity, 1 Cor. 13. 4. *Charity envyeth not*; and indeed common reaſon may confirm this to us, for envy is a ſorrow at the proſperity of another, and therefore muſt needs be directly contrary to that deſire of it, which we ſhewed before was the effect of love; ſo that if love bear ſway in the heart, 'twill certainly chaſe out Envy. How vainly then do thoſe pretend to this vertue, that are ſtill grudging and repining at every good hap of others?

Pride. Secondly, It keeps down Pride and Haughtineſs. This is alſo taught us by the Apoſtle in the forementioned place, *Charity vaunteth not it ſelf, is not puffed up*; and accordingly we find, that where this vertue of love is commanded, there humility is joyned with it. Thus it is, *Col.* 3. 12. *Put on therefore bowels of Mercies, Kindneſs, Humbleneſs of mind*, and *Rom.* 12. 10. *Be kindly affectioned one towards another with brotherly love, in honour preferring one another*, where you ſee how cloſe an attendant Humility is of love. Indeed it naturally flows from it, for love always ſets a price and value upon the thing beloved, makes us eſteem and prize it; thus we too conſtantly find it in ſelf-love, it makes us think highly of our ſelves, that we are much more excellent than other Men. Now if love thus plac'd on our ſelves, beget pride, let us but divert the courſe, and turn this love on our brethren, and it will as ſurely beget humility, for then we ſhould ſee and value thoſe gifts and excellencies of theirs, which now our pride, or our hatred make us to overlook and neglect,

neglect, and not think it reaſonable either to deſpiſe them, or vaunt and magnifie our ſelves upon ſuch a compariſon; we ſhould certainly find cauſe to put the Apoſtle's exhortation in practice, *Phil.* 2. 4. That we ſhould *eſteem others better than our ſelves.* Whoever therefore is of ſo haughty a temper, as to vilifie and diſdain others, may conclude, he hath not this charity rooted in his heart.

Cenſoriouſneſs.

Thirdly, It caſts out cenſoriouſneſs and raſh judging; Charity, as the Apoſtle ſaith, 1 *Cor.* 13. 5. *thinketh no evil*; is not apt to entertain ill conceits of others, but on the contrary, as it follows, Verſe 7. *Believeth all things, hopeth all things*; that is, it is forward to believe and hope the beſt of all Men; and ſurely our own experience tells us the ſame, for where we love we are uſually unapt to diſcern faults, be they never ſo groſs (witneſs the great blindneſs we generally have towards our own) and therefore ſhall certainly not be like to create them, where they are not, or to aggravate them beyond their true ſize and degree: And then to what ſhall we impute thoſe unmerciful cenſures and raſh judgments of others, ſo frequent among Men, but to the want of this Charity?

Diſſembling.

Fourthly, It caſts out diſſembling and feigned kindneſs; where this true and real love is, that falſe and counterfeit one flies from before it, and this is the love we are commanded to have, ſuch as *is without diſſimulation, Rom.* 12. 9. Indeed where this is rooted in the heart, there can-

be

be no poſſible uſe of diſſimulation: becauſe this is in truth all that the falſe one would ſeem to be, and ſo is as far beyond it as nature is beyond Art; nay indeed as a divine vertue is beyond a foul ſin; for ſuch is that hypocritical kindneſs: and yet 'tis to be feared, that does too generally uſurp the place of this real charity; the effects of it are too viſible among us, there being nothing more common than to ſee Men make large profeſſions to thoſe whom as ſoon as their backs are turned they either deride or miſchief.

Self-ſeeking.

Fifthly, It caſts out all mercenarineſs and ſelf-ſeeking: 'tis of ſo noble and generous a temper, that it deſpiſes all projectings for gain or advantage, *Love ſeeketh not her own*, 1 *Cor.* 13. 5. And therefore that huckſtering kind of love ſo much uſed in the World, which places it ſelf only there where it may fetch in benefit, is very far from this charity.

Revenge.

Laſtly, It turns out of the heart all malice and deſire of Revenge, which is ſo utterly contrary to it, that it is impoſſible they ſhould both dwell in the ſame breaſt; 'tis the property of love to *bear all things*, 1 *Cor.* 13. 7. to endure the greateſt injuries, without thought of making any other return to them than prayers and bleſſings, and therefore the malicious revengeful perſon is of all others the greateſt ſtranger to this charity.

This charity to be extended even to enemies.

'Tis true, if this vertue were to be exerciſed but towards ſome ſort of perſons, it might conſiſt with malice to

to others, it being poſſible for a Man that bitterly hates one, to love another: but we are to take notice that this Charity muſt not be ſo confined, but muſt extend and ſtretch it ſelf to all Men in the World, particularly to Enemies, or elſe it is not that divine Charity commended to us by Chriſt. The loving of friends and benefactors is ſo low a pitch, that the very Publicans and ſinners, the worſt of Men were able to attain to it, *Matth.*5.46. And therefore 'tis not counted rewardable in a Diſciple of Chriſt; no, he expects we ſhould ſoar higher, and therefore hath ſet us this more ſpiritual and excellent precept of loving of enemies, *Matth.* 4. 44. *I ſay unto you, love your enemies, bleſs them that curſe you, and pray for them that deſpitefully uſe you, and perſecute you*, and whoſoever does not thus, will never be owned by him for a Diſciple. We are therefore to conclude, that all which hath been ſaid concerning this Charity of the affections, muſt be underſtood to belong as well to our ſpitefulleſt enemy, as our moſt obliging friend. But becauſe this is a duty to which the froward nature of Man is apt to object much, 'twill not be amiſs to inſiſt a little on ſome conſiderations which may enforce it on us.

Motives thereunto, Command of Chriſt.

And firſt, conſider what hath been already toucht on, that it is the Command of Chriſt, both in the Texts above-mentioned, and multitudes of others; there being ſcarce any precept ſo often repeated in the New Teſtament, as this of loving and forgiving of our enemies. Thus, *Eph.*4.32. *Be*

Be ye kind one to another, tender hearted, forgiving one another; And again, *Col.* 3. 13. *Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel againſt any, even as Chriſt forgave you, ſo alſo do ye.* So alſo, 1 *Pet.* 3. 9. *Not rendring evil for evil, nor railing for railing, but contrariwiſe Bleſſings.* A whole Volume of Texts might be brought to this purpoſe, but theſe are certainly enough to convince any Man, that this is ſtrictly required of us by Chriſt, and indeed I think there are few that ever heard of the Goſpel, but know it is ſo. The more prodigiouſly ſtrange is it, that men that call themſelves Chriſtians, ſhould give no degree of obedience to it, nay, not only ſo, but even publickly avow, and profeſs the contrary, as we daily ſee they do, it being ordinary to have Men reſolve, and declare that they will not forgive ſuch, or ſuch a Man, and no conſideration of Chriſt's command can at all move them from their purpoſe. Certainly theſe Men underſtand not what is meant by the very word Chriſtian, which ſignifies a ſervant and diſciple of Chriſt, and this Charity is the very badge of the one, and leſſon of the other: and therefore 'tis the greateſt abſurdity, and contradiction, to profeſs themſelves Chriſtians, and yet at the ſame time to reſiſt this ſo expreſs Command of that Chriſt, whom they own as their Maſter, *If I be a Maſter*, ſaith God, *where is my fear*, *Mal.* 1. 6. Obedience and reverence are ſo much the duties of ſervants, that no Man is thought to look on him as a Maſter, to whom he pays them not. *Why call ye me Lord, Lord, and do not the things I ſay?* ſaith Chriſt, *Luke*

Luke 6. 46. The whole World is divided into two great Families, Chriſt's and Satan's, and the obedience each Man pays, ſignifies to which of theſe Maſters he belongs; if he obey Chriſt, to Chriſt; if Satan, to Satan. Now this ſin of malice and revenge is ſo much the dictate of that wicked ſpirit, that there is nothing can be a more direct obeying of him; 'tis the taking his livery on our backs, the proclamation whoſe ſervants we are. What ridiculous impudence is it then, for Men that have thus entred themſelves of Satan's Family, to pretend to be the ſervants of Chriſt? Let ſuch know aſſuredly, that they ſhall not be owned by him, but at the great day of Account, be turned over to their proper Maſter, to receive their wages in fire and brimſtone.

Example of God.

A ſecond conſideration is the example of God; this is an argument Chriſt himſelf thought fit to uſe, to impreſs this duty on us, as you may ſee, *Luke* 6. 35, 36. Where after having given the Command of loving Enemies, he encourages to the practice of it, by telling that it is that which will make us the *Children of the Higheſt* (that is, 'twill give us a likeneſs and reſemblance to him, as Children have to their Parents) *for he is kind to the unthankful and the evil*; and to the ſame purpoſe you may read, *Matth.* 5. 45. *He maketh his ſun to riſe on the evil and on the good, and ſendeth rain on the juſt and on the unjuſt*; and ſure this is a moſt forcible conſideration to excite us to this duty. God, we know, is the fountain of perfection, and the being

ing like to him, is the ſumm of all we can wiſh for, and though it was *Lucifer*'s fall, his Ambition to be like the moſt high, yet had the likeneſs he affected been only that of Holineſs and goodneſs, he might ſtill have been an Angel of light. This deſire of imitating our Heavenly Father is the eſpecial mark of a child of his. Now this kindneſs and goodneſs to enemies is moſt eminently remarkable in God, and that not only in reſpect of the temporal mercies, which he indifferently beſtows on all, his *ſun and rain on the unjuſt*, as in the Text forementioned, but chiefly in his ſpiritual Mercies. We are all by our wicked works, *Col.* 1. 21. *Enemies to him*, and the miſchief of that enmity would have fallen wholly upon our ſelves. God had no motive beſides that of his pity to us, to wiſh a reconciliation, yet ſo far was he from returning our enmity, when he might have revenged himſelf to our eternal ruine, that he deſigns and contrives how he may bring us to be at peace with him. This is a huge degree of mercy and kindneſs, but the means he uſed for effecting this, is yet far beyond it, he ſent his own Son from Heaven to work it, and that not only by perſwaſions, but ſufferings alſo; ſo much did he prize us miſerable creatures, that he thought us not too dear bought with the bloud of his Son. The like example of mercy and patience we have in Chriſt, both in *laying down his life for us Enemies*, and alſo in that meek manner of doing it, which we find excellently ſet forth by the Apoſtle, 1 *Pet.* 2. 22, 23, 24. and commended to our imitation. Now ſurely when all this is conſidered, we may well

well make S. *John*'s inference; *Beloved, if God ſo loved us, we ought alſo to love one another*, 1 *John* 4. 11. How ſhameful a thing is it for us to retain diſpleaſures againſt our brethren, when God thus lays by his towards us, and that when we have ſo highly provoked him?

The diſproportion between our offences againſt God, and mens againſt us.

This directs to a third conſideration, the comparing our ſins againſt God, with the offences of our brethren againſt us, which we no ſooner ſhall come to do, but there will appear a vaſt difference between them, and that in ſeveral reſpects: For firſt, there is the Majeſty of the Perſon againſt whom we ſin, which exceedingly encreaſes the guilt, whereas between Man and Man, there cannot be ſo great a diſtance; for though ſome Men are by God advanced to ſuch eminency of dignity as may make an injury offered to them the greater, yet ſtill they are but Men of the ſame nature with us, whereas he is God bleſſed for ever. Secondly, there is his ſoveraignty and power, which is original in God, for we are his creatures, we have received our whole being from him, and therefore are in the deepeſt manner bound to perfect obedience; whereas all the ſoveraignty that one Man can poſſibly have over another, is but imparted to them by God, and for the moſt part there is none of this neither in the caſe, quarrels being moſt uſual among equals. Thirdly, there is his infinite bounty and goodneſs to us; all that ever we enjoy, whether in relation to this life or a better,

better, being wholly his free gift, and ſo there is the fouleſt ingratitude added to our other crimes; in which reſpect alſo 'tis impoſſible for one Man to offend againſt another in ſuch a degree, for though one may be (and too many are) guilty of unthankfulneſs towards Men, yet becauſe the greateſt benefits that Man can beſtow, are infinitely ſhort of thoſe which God doth, the ingratitude cannot be near ſo great as toward God it is. Laſtly, there is the greatneſs and multitude of our ſins againſt God, which do infinitely exceed all that the moſt injurious Man can do againſt us; for we all ſin much oftner and more hainouſly againſt him, than any Man be he never ſo malicious, can find opportunities of injuring his brethren. This inequality and diſproportion our Saviour intimates in the Parable, *Matth.* 18. where our offences againſt God are noted by the ten thouſand talents, whereas our brethrens againſt us are deſcribed by the hundred pence; a talent hugely outweighs a penny, and ten thouſand out-number a hundred, yet ſo and much more does the weight and number of our ſins exceed all the offences of others againſt us; Much more might be ſaid to ſhew the vaſt inequality between the faults which God forgives us, and thoſe we can poſſibly have to forgive our brethren: But this I ſuppoſe may ſuffice to ſilence all the objections of cruel and revengeful perſons, againſt this kindneſs to enemies. They are apt to look upon it as an abſurd and unreaſonable thing, but ſince God himſelf acts it in ſo much a higher degree, who can without blaſphemy ſay 'tis unreaſonable?

ſonable? If this, or any other ſpiritual duty appear ſo to us, we may learn the reaſon from the Apoſtle, 1 *Cor.* 2. 14. *The carnal man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God, for they are fooliſhneſs unto him*; 'tis the carnality and fleſhlineſs of our hearts that makes it ſeem ſo, and therefore inſtead of diſputing againſt the duty, let us purge our hearts ofthat, and then we ſhall find that true which the ſpiritual Wiſdom affirms of her doctrines, *Prov.* 8. 9. *They are all plain to him that underſtandeth, and right to them that find knowledge.*

Pleaſantneſs of this Duty.

Nay, This loving of enemies is not only a reaſonable, but a pleaſant duty, and that I ſuppoſe as a fourth Conſideration; there is a great deal of ſweetneſs and delight to be found in it. Of this I confeſs none can ſo well judge as thoſe that have practiſed it, the nature even of earthly pleaſures being ſuch, that 'tis the enjoyment only that can make a Man truly know them. No Man can ſo deſcribe the taſte of any delicious thing to another, as that by it he ſhall know the reliſh of it; he muſt firſt actually taſte of it: and ſure 'tis much more ſo in ſpiritual pleaſures, and therefore he that would fully know the ſweetneſs and pleaſantneſs of this duty, let him ſet to the practice, and then his own experience will be the beſt informer. But in the mean time, how very unjuſt, yea, and fooliſh is it, to pronounce ill of it before trial? For men to ſay, This is irkſom and intolerable, who never ſo much as once offered to try whether indeed it were ſo or no? Yet by this very means

means an ill opinion is brought up of this moſt delightful duty, and paſſes currant among Men, whereas in all juſtice the teſtimony of it ſhould be taken only from thoſe who have tried it, and they would certainly give another account of it.

But though the full knowledge hereof be to be had only by this nearer acquaintance, yet methinks even thoſe who look at it but at a diſtance may diſcern ſomewhat of amiableneſs in it, if no other way, yet at leaſt by comparing it with the uneaſineſs of its contrary. Malice and revenge are the moſt reſtleſs, tormenting paſſions that can poſſeſs the mind of a Man, they keep Men in perpetual ſtudy and care how to effect their miſchievous purpoſes, it diſturbs their very ſleep, as *Solomon* obſerves, *Prov.* 4.16. *They ſleep not, except they have done miſchief; and their ſleep is taken away, except they cauſe ſome to fall.* Yea, it imbitters all the good things they enjoy, ſo that they have no taſte or reliſh of them. A remarkable example of this we have in *Haman*, who though he abounded in all the greatneſs and felicity of the World, yet the malice he had to a poor deſpicable Man, *Mordecai*, kept him from taſting contentment in all this, as you may ſee, *Eſther* 5. where after he had related to his friends all his proſperities, Verſe 11. he concludes thus, Verſe 12. *Yet all this availeth me nothing, ſo long as I ſee Mordecai the Jew ſitting in the Kings gate.* On the other ſide, the peaceable ſpirit, that can quietly paſs by all injuries and affronts, enjoys a continual calm, and is above the malice of his enemies: for let them do what they can, they cannot rob him of his quiet, he is firm as a rock, which

which no ſtorms or winds can move, when the furious and revengeful Man is like a Wave, which the leaſt blaſt toſſes and tumbles from its place. But beſides this inward diſquiet of revengeful Men, they often bring many outward calamities upon themſelves, they exaſperate their enemies, and provoke them to do them greater miſchiefs, nay, oftentimes they willingly run themſelves upon the greateſt miſeries in purſuit of their revenge, to which 'tis ordinary to ſee Men ſacrifice Goods, Eaſe, Credit, Life, nay, Soul it ſelf, not caring what they ſuffer themſelves, ſo they may ſpight their enemy; ſo ſtrangely does this wretched humour beſot and blind them. On the contrary the meek perſon he often melts his adverſary, pacifies his anger; *A ſoft anſwer turneth away wrath*, ſaith *Solomon. Prov.* 15. 1. And ſure there is nothing can tend more to that end; but if it do happen that his enemy be ſo inhumane, that he miſs of doing that, yet he is ſtill a gainer by all he can ſuffer. For firſt, he gains an opportunity of exerciſing that moſt Chriſtian grace of charity and forgiveneſs; and ſo at once of obeying the command, and imitating the example of his Saviour, which is to a true Chriſtian ſpirit a moſt valuable advantage; and then ſecondly, he gains an acceſſion and increaſe to his reward hereafter. And if it be objected, that that is not to be reckoned in to the preſent pleaſure of the duty: I anſwer, that the expectation and belief of it is, and that alone is a delight infinitely more raviſhing than the preſent enjoyment of all ſenſual pleaſure can be.

The

If we forgive not, God will not forgive us.

The fourth Conſideration is the Dangers of not performing this Duty, of which I might reckon up divers, but I ſhall inſiſt only on that great one, which contains in it all the reſt, and that is the forfeiting of our own pardons from God, the having our ſins againſt him kept ſtill on his ſcore and not forgiven. This is a conſideration, that methinks ſhould affright us into good nature; if it do not, our malice is greater to our ſelves than to our enemies. For alas! what hurt is it poſſible for thee to do to another, which can bear any compariſon with that thou doſt thy ſelf in loſing the pardon of thy ſins? which is ſo unſpeakable a miſchief, that the Devil himſelf with all his malice cannot wiſh a greater. 'Tis all he aims at, firſt, that we may ſin, and then that thoſe ſins may never be pardoned, for then he knows he has us ſure enough. Hell, and damnation being certainly the portion of every unpardoned ſinner, beſides all other effects of God's wrath in this life. Conſider this, and then tell me what thou haſt got by the higheſt revenge thou ever actedſt upon another. 'Tis a Deviliſh phraſe in the mouth of Men, *That revenge is ſweet:* but is it poſſible there can be (even to the moſt diſtemperate palate) any ſuch ſweetneſs in it, as may recompence that everlaſting bitterneſs that attends it? 'Tis certain no Man in his wits can upon ſober judging, imagine there is. But alas! we give not our ſelves time to weigh things, but ſuffer our ſelves to be hurried away with the heat of an angry humour, never

ver conſidering how dear we muſt pay for it: like the ſilly Bee, that in anger leaves at once her ſting and her life behind her; the ſting may perhaps give ſome ſhort pain to the fleſh it ſticks in, but yet there is none but diſcerns the Bee has the worſt of it, that pays her life for ſo poor a revenge: So it is in the greateſt act of our malice, we may perhaps leave our ſtings in others, put them to ſome preſent trouble, but that compared with the hurt redounds to our ſelves by it, is no more than that inconſiderable pain is to death; Nay, not ſo much, becauſe the miſchiefs that we bring upon our ſelves are eternal, to which no finite thing can bear any proportion. Remember then, whenſoever thou art contriving and plotting a revenge, that thou quite miſtakeſt the mark; thou thinkeſt to hit the enemy, and alas! thou woundeſt thy ſelf to death. And let no Man ſpeak peace to himſelf, or think that theſe are vain terrors, and that he may obtain pardon from God, though he give none to his Brethren. For he that is truth it ſelf has aſſured us the contrary, *Matth.6.15. If ye forgive not men their treſpaſſes, neither will your father forgive your treſpaſſes.* And leſt we ſhould forget the neceſſity of this duty, he has inſerted it in our daily Prayers, where we make it the condition, on which we beg pardon from God; *Forgive us our treſpaſſes, as we forgive them that treſpaſs againſt us.* What a heavy curſe then does every revengeful perſon lay upon himſelf, when he ſays this Prayer? He does in effect beg God not to forgive him; and 'tis too ſure that part of his Prayer will be heard, he ſhall be forgiven juſt

as

as he forgives, that is, not at all. This is yet farther ſet out to us in the Parable of the Lord and the Servant, *Matth.* 18. The ſervant had obtained of his Lord the forgiveneſs of a vaſt debt, ten thouſand talents, yet was ſo cruel to his fellow-ſervant, as to exact a poor trifling ſumm of an hundred pence, upon which his Lord recals his former forgiveneſs, and charges him again with the whole debt: and this Chriſt applies to our preſent purpoſe, Verſe 35. *So likewiſe ſhall my heavenly Father do unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every man his brother their treſpaſſes.* One ſuch act of uncharitableneſs is able to forfeit us the pardon God hath granted us, and then all our ſins return again upon us, and ſink us to utter ruine. I ſuppoſe it needleſs to heap up more teſtimonies of Scripture for the truth of this; theſe are ſo clear, as may ſurely ſerve to perſwade any Man, that acknowledges Scripture, of the great and fearful danger of this ſin of uncharitableneſs. The Lord poſſeſs all our hearts with ſuch a juſt ſenſe of it as may make us avoid it.

Gratitude to God.

The laſt conſideration I ſhall mention, is that of Gratitude. God has ſhewed wonderful mercies to us, Chriſt has ſuffered heavy things to bring us into a capacity of that mercy and pardon from God: and ſhall we not then think our ſelves obliged to ſome returns of thankfulneſs? If we will take the Apoſtles judgment, he tells us, 2 *Cor.* 5. 15. *That ſince Chriſt died for us all, 'tis but reaſonable that we ſhould not henceforth live unto our ſelves, but unto him*

him that died for us. Indeed were every moment of our life conſecrated to his immediate Service 'twere no more than common gratitude requires, and far leſs than ſuch ineſtimable benefits deſerve; what a ſhameful unthankfulneſs is it then to deny him ſo poor a ſatisfaction as this, the forgiving our brethren? Suppoſe a Man that were ranſomed either from death or ſlavery, by the bounty and ſufferings of another, ſhould upon his releaſe be charged by him that ſo freed him, in return of that kindneſs of his, to forgive ſome ſlight debt, which was owing him by ſome third perſon, would you not think him the unthankfulleſt wretch in the World, that ſhould refuſe this ſo great a benefactor? Yet ſuch a wretch and much worſe is every revengeful perſon: Chriſt hath bought us out of eternal ſlavery, and that not with *corruptible things, as ſilver and gold,* 1 Pet. 1. 10. *but with his own moſt precious bloud,* and hath earneſtly recommended to us the love of our brethren, and that with the moſt moving arguments, drawn from the greatneſs of his love to us, and if we ſhall obſtinately refuſe him in ſo juſt, ſo moderate a demand, how unſpeakable a vileneſs is it? And yet this we do down-right, if we keep any malice or grudge to any perſon whatſoever. Nay farther, this is not barely an unthankfulneſs, but there is alſo joyned with it a horrible contempt and deſpiſing of him. This Peace and unity of brethren was a thing ſo much prized and valued by him, that when he was to leave the World, he thought it the moſt precious thing he could bequeath, and therefore left it by way of legacy

to his Diſciples, *John* 14.27. *Peace I leave with you.* We uſe to ſet a great value on the ſlighteſt bequeſts of our dead friends, to be exceeding careful not to loſe them; and therefore if we wilfully bangle away this ſo precious a Legacy of Chriſt, 'tis a plain ſign we want that love and eſteem of him, which we have of our earthly friends, and that we deſpiſe him as well as his Legacy. The great prevailing of this ſin of uncharitableneſs has made me ſtand thus long on theſe conſiderations, for the ſubduing it. *God grant they may make ſuch impreſſion on the Reader, as may be available to that purpoſe.*

I ſhall add only this one advice, that theſe, or whatſoever other remedies againſt this ſin, muſt be uſed timely: 'tis oft-times the fruſtrating of bodily medicines, the applying them too late; and 'tis much oftner ſo in ſpiritual: therefore if it be poſſible, let theſe and the like conſiderations be ſo conſtantly and habitually fixt in thy heart, that they may frame it to ſuch meekneſs, as may prevent all riſings of rancor or revenge in thee, for it is much better they ſhould ſerve as armour to prevent, than as balſom to cure the wound. But if this paſſion be not yet ſo ſubdued in thee, but that there will be ſome ſtirrings of it, yet then be ſure to take it at the very firſt riſe, and let not thy fancy chew, as it were, upon the injury by often rolling it in thy mind, but remember betimes the foregoing conſiderations, and withal, that this is a time and ſeaſon of trial to thee, wherein thou mayeſt ſhew thou haſt profited

The firſt riſing of rancor to be ſuppreſt.

profited in Christ's School, there now being an opportunity offered thee either of obeying and pleasing God, by passing by this offence of thy brother, or else of obeying and pleasing Satan, that lover of discord, by nourishing hatred against him. Remember this, I say, betimes, before thou be inflamed, for if this fire be throughly kindled, it will cast such a smoak, as will blind thy reason, and make thee unfit to judge even in this so very plain a case, Whether it be better by obeying God, to purchase to thy self eternal bliss; or by obeying Satan, eternal torments. Whereas if thou put the question to thy self before this commotion, and disturbance of mind, 'tis impossible but thy understanding must pronounce for God; and then unless thou wilt be so perverse that thou wilt deliberately chuse death, thou wilt surely practise according to that sentence of thy understanding. I shall add no more on this first part of Charity, that of the Affections.

Charity in the Actions.

I proceed now to that of the Actions; And this indeed is it, whereby the former must be approved: we may pretend great charity within, but if none break forth in the Actions, we may say of that Love, as S. *James* doth of the Faith he speaks of, *that it is dead. Jam.* 2. 20. It is the loving in Deed, that must *approve our hearts before God*, 1 *John* 3.18. Now this love in the Actions may likewise fitly be distributed, as the former was, in relation to the four distinct capacities of our brethren, their Souls, their Bodies, their Goods and Credit.

Towards the mind of our Neighbour.

The Soul, I formerly told you, may be conſidered either in a Natural or Spiritual ſence, and in both of them Charity binds us to do all the good we can. As the Soul ſignifies the Mind of a Man, ſo we are to endeavour the comfort and refreſhment of our brethren, deſire to give them all true cauſe of joy and chearfulneſs, eſpecially when we ſee any under any ſadneſs or heavineſs, then to bring out all the cordials we can procure, that is, to labour by all Chriſtian and fit means to chear the troubled ſpirits of our brethren, to *comfort them that are in any heavineſs*, as the Apoſtle ſpeaks, 2 *Cor.* 1. 4.

His Soul.

But the Soul in the ſpiritual ſence, is yet of greater concernment, and the ſecuring of that is a matter of much greater moment, than the refreſhing of the mind only, in as much as the eternal ſorrows and ſadneſſes of Hell exceed the deepeſt ſorrows of this life; and therefore though we muſt not omit the former, yet on this we are to employ our moſt zealous charities; wherein we are not to content our ſelves with a bare wiſhing well to the Souls of our brethren, this alone is a ſluggiſh ſort of kindneſs unworthy of thoſe who are to imitate the great Redeemer of Souls, who did and ſuffered ſo much in that purchace: No, we muſt add alſo our endeavour to make them that we wiſh them; to this purpoſe it were very reaſonable to propound to our ſelves in all our converſings with others, that one great deſign of doing ſome good to their Souls. If this pur-

poſe

poſe were fixt in our minds, we ſhould then diſcern perhaps many opportunities, which now we overlook, of doing ſomething towards it. The brutiſh ignorance of one would call upon thee to endeavour his inſtruction: the open ſin of another, to reprehend and admoniſh him; the faint and weak virtue of another, to confirm and encourage him. Every ſpiritual want of thy brother may give thee ſome occaſion of exerciſing ſome part of this Charity! or if thy circumſtances be ſuch, that upon ſober judging, thou think it vain to attempt any thing thy ſelf, as if either thy meanneſs, or thy unacquaintedneſs, or any the like impediment be like to render thy exhortations fruitleſs, yet if thou art induſtrious in thy Charity, thou mayeſt probably find out ſome other inſtrument, by whom to do it more ſucceſsfully. There cannot be a nobler ſtudy than how to benefit mens Souls, and therefore where the direct means are improper, 'tis fit we ſhould whet our wits for attaining of others. Indeed 'tis a ſhame, we ſhould not as induſtrioufly contrive for this great ſpiritual concernment of others, as we do for every worldly trifling intereſt of our own; yet in them we are unwearied, and try one means after another, till we compaſs our end. But if after all our ſerious endeavours, the obſtinacy of Men do not ſuffer us, or themſelves rather, to reap any fruit from them, if all our wooings and intreatings of Men to have mercy on their own Souls will not work on them, yet be ſure to continue ſtill to exhort by thy example. Let thy great care and tenderneſs of thy own Soul preach to them

the value of theirs, and give not over thy compaſſions to them, but with the Prophet, *Jer.* 13. 17. *Let thy ſoul weep in ſecret for them*; and with the *Pſalmiſt*, *Let rivers of waters run down thine eyes, becauſe they keep not God's Law*, Pſal. 119. 136. Yea, with Chriſt himſelf, weep over them, *who will not know the things that belong to their peace*, *Luke* 19. 42. And when no importunities with them will work, yet even then ceaſe not to importune God for them, that he will draw them to himſelf. Thus we ſee *Samuel*, when he could not diſſwade the People from that ſinful purpoſe they were upon, yet he profeſſes notwithſtanding, that he will not ceaſe praying for them; nay, he lookt on it as ſo much a duty, that it would be ſin for him to omit it, *God forbid*, ſays he, *that I ſhould ſin againſt the Lord in ceaſing to pray for you*, 1 *Sam.* 12. 23. Nor ſhall we need to fear that our prayers will be quite loſt, for if they prevail not for thoſe for whom we pour them out, yet however they will return into our own boſoms, *Pſalm* 35. 13. we ſhall be ſure not to miſs of the reward of that Charity.

Charity in reſpect of the Body.

In the ſecond place, we are to exerciſe this Active Charity towards the bodies of our Neighbours; we are not only to compaſſionate their pains and miſeries, but alſo to do what we can for their eaſe and relief. The good *Samaritan*, *Luke* 10. had never been propoſed as our pattern, had he not as well helped as pitied the wounded Man. 'Tis not good wiſhes, no nor good words neither, that avail in ſuch caſes, as *S. James* tells us, *If*

a

a brother or ſiſter be naked & deſtitute of daily food, and one of you ſay unto them, Depart in peace, be ye warmed and filled, notwithſtanding ye give him not thoſe things that are needful for the body, what doth it profit? *James* 2. 15, 16. No ſure, it profits them nothing in reſpect of their bodies, and it will profit thee as little in reſpect of thy Soul, it will never be reckoned to thee as a Charity. This relieving of the bodily wants of our brethren, is a thing ſo ſtrictly required of us, that we find it ſet down, *Matth.* 25. as the eſpecial thing we ſhall be tried by at the laſt Day, on the omiſſion whereof is grounded that dreadful ſentence, Verſe 41. *Depart from me ye curſed, into everlaſting fire, prepared for the Devil and his Angels.* And if it ſhall now be asked, what are the particular acts of this kind which we are to perform? I think we cannot better inform our ſelves for the frequent and ordinary ones, than from this Chapter, where are ſet down theſe ſeverals. *The giving meat to the hungry, and drink to the thirſty, harbouring the ſtranger, clothing the naked, and viſiting the ſick and impriſoned*; By which viſiting is meant not a bare coming to ſee them, but ſo coming as to comfort and relieve them: for otherwiſe it will be but like the *Levite* in the Goſpel, *Luke* 10. who came and *looked on the wounded man*, but did no more, which will never be accepted by God. Theſe are common and ordinary exerciſes of this Charity, for which we cannot want frequent opportunities. But beſides theſe there may ſometimes by God's eſpecial providence fall into our hands, occaſions of doing other good offices to the bodies of

our Neighbours; we may ſometimes find a wounded Man with the *Samaritan*, and then 'tis our duty to do as he did: we may ſometimes find an innocent perſon condemned to death, as *Suſanna* was, and then are with *Daniel* to uſe all poſſible endeavour for their deliverances. This caſe *Solomon* ſeems to refer to, *Prov.* 24. 11. *If thou forbear to deliver him that is drawn unto death, and them that are ready to be ſlain; if thou ſayeſt, Behold we know it not; doth not he that pondereth the heart conſider? and he that keepeth thy ſoul, doth not he know it? ſhall not he render to every man according to his deeds?* We are not lightly to put off the matter with vain excuſes, but to remember that God, who knows our moſt ſecret thoughts, will ſeverely examine, whether we have willingly omitted the performance of ſuch a charity: ſometimes again (nay, God knows, often nowadays) we may ſee a Man that by a courſe of intemperance is in danger to deſtroy his health, to ſhorten his days, and then it is a due charity not only to the ſoul, but to the body alſo, to endeavour to draw him from it. It is impoſſible to ſet down all the poſſible acts of this corporal charity, becauſe there may ſometimes happen ſuch opportunities as none can foreſee; we are therefore always to carry about us a ſerious reſolution of doing whatever good of this kind we ſhall at any time diſcern occaſion for, and then whenever that occaſion is offered, we are to look on it as a call, as it were from Heaven, to put that reſolution in practice. This part of charity ſeems to be ſo much implanted in our natures, as we are Men, that we generally account them

not

not only unchriſtian, but inhumane that are void of it; and therefore I hope there will not need much perſwaſion to it, ſince our very nature inclines us; but certainly that very conſideration will ſerve hugely to encreaſe the guilt of thoſe that are wanting in it; for ſince this command is ſo agreeable even to fleſh and bloud, our diſobedience to it can proceed from nothing but a ſtubbornneſs and reſiſtance againſt God who gives it.

SUNDAY XVII.

Of Charity; Alms-giving, &c. *Of Charity in reſpect of our Neighbour's Credit*, &c. *Of Peace-making: Of going to Law: Of Charity to our Enemies*, &c.

Sect. 1. THE third way of expreſſing this Charity is towards the Goods or Eſtate of our Neighbour; we are to endeavour his thriving and proſperity in theſe outward good things; and to that end, be willing to aſſiſt and further him in all honeſt ways of improving or preſerving them, by any neighbourly and friendly office: Opportunities of this do many times fall out. A man may ſometimes by his power or perſwaſion

Charity in reſpect of the Goods.

deliver his neighbours goods out of the hands of a thief or oppreſſor; ſometimes again by his advice and counſel, he may ſet him in a way of thriving, or turn him from ſome ruinous courſe; and many other occaſions there may be of doing good turns to another, without any loſs or damage to our ſelves: and then we are to do them, even to our Rich Neighbours, thoſe that are as wealthy (perhaps much more ſo) as our ſelves; for though Charity do not bind us to give to thoſe that want leſs than our ſelves, yet whenever we can further their profit without leſſening our own ſtore, it requires it of us: Nay, if the damage be but light to us in compariſon of the advantage to him, it will become us rather to hazard that light damage, than loſe him that greater advantage.

Towards the Rich.

2. But towards our poor brother, Charity ties us to much more; we are there only to conſider the ſupplying of his wants, and not to ſtick at parting with what is our own, to relieve him; but as far as we are able, give freely what is neceſſary to him. This duty of Almſ-giving is perfectly neceſſary for the approving our love not only to Men, but even to God himſelf, as *S. John* tells us, 1 *John* 3. 17. *Whoſo hath this worlds goods, and ſeeth his brother have need, and ſhutteth up his bowels of compaſſion from him, how dwelleth the love of God in him?* 'Tis vain for him to pretend to love either God or man, who loves his money ſo much better, that he will ſee his poor brother (who is a Man, and bears the image

Towards the Poor.

image of God) ſuffer all extremities, rather than part with any thing to relieve him. On the other ſide, the performance of this duty is highly acceptable with God as well as with Men.

3. 'Tis called, *Heb.* 13. 16. *A ſacrifice wherewith God is well pleaſed*, and again, *Phil.* 4. 18. S. *Paul* calls their Alms to him, *A ſacrifice acceptable, well pleaſing to God*, and the Church hath always looked on it as ſuch; and therefore joyned it with the ſolemneſt part of worſhip, the holy Sacrament. But becauſe even Sacrifices themſelves under the Law, were often made unacceptable by being maimed and blemiſhed, it will here be neceſſary to enquire what are the due qualifications of this Sacrifice.

Motives of Alms-giving.

4. Of theſe there are ſome that reſpect the motive, ſome the manner of our giving. The motive may be three-fold, reſpecting God, our Neighbour, and our ſelves. That which reſpects God is obedience and thankfulneſs to him: he has commanded we ſhould give alms, and therefore one ſpecial end of our doing ſo, muſt be the obeying that precept of his. And it is from his bounty alone that we receive all our plenty, and this is the propereſt way of expreſſing our thankfulneſs for it, for, as the *Pſalmiſt* ſaith, *our goodneſs extendeth not unto God*, *Pſal.* 16. 2. That tribute which we deſire to pay out of our eſtates, we cannot pay to his perſon. 'Tis the poor, that are as it were his Proxy and receivers, and therefore whatever we ſhould by way of thankfulneſs give back again unto God, our alms is the way of doing it. Secondly, in reſpect

reſpect of our neighbour, the motive muſt be a true love and compaſſion to him, a tender fellow-feeling of his wants, and deſire of his comfort and relief. Thirdly, in reſpect of our ſelves, the motive is to be the hope of that eternal reward promiſed to this performance. This Chriſt points out to us, when he bids us *Lay up our treaſure in Heaven*, Matth. 6. 20. And to *make us friends of the Mammon of unrighteouſneſs, that they may receive us into everlaſting habitations*, *Luke* 16. 9. that is, by a charitable diſpenſing of our temporal goods to the poor, to lay up a ſtock in Heaven, to gain a title to thoſe endleſs felicities, which God hath promiſed to the charitable. That is the harveſt we muſt expect of what we ſow in theſe works of mercy, which will be ſo rich as would abundantly recompence us, though we ſhould, as the Apoſtle ſpeaks, 1 *Cor.* 13. 3. *Beſtow all our goods to feed the poor:* But then we muſt be ſure we make this our ſole aim, and not inſtead of this, propoſe to our ſelves the praiſe of Men, as the motive of our charity, that will rob us of the other; this is expreſly told us by Chriſt, *Matth.* 6. They that ſet their hearts on the credit they ſhall gain with Men, muſt take that as their portion, Verſe 3. *Verily I ſay unto you, they have their reward*; they chuſe, it ſeems, rather to have Men their Pay-maſters, than God, and to them they are turn'd off; that little airy praiſe they get from them, is all the reward they muſt expect: *Ye have no reward of my Father which is in Heaven*, Verſe 1. We have therefore need to watch our hearts narrowly, that this deſire of vain-glory ſteal not in, and befool us into that

that miſerable exchange of a vain blaſt of Mens breath for thoſe ſubſtantial and eternal joys of Heaven.

5. In the ſecond place we muſt take care of our Alms-giving, in reſpect of the manner; and in that firſt, we muſt give chearfully; Men uſually value a ſmall thing that is given chearfully, and with a good heart, more than a much greater, that is wrung from a Man with grudging and unwillingneſs; and God is of the ſame mind, he loves a chearful giver, 2 *Cor.* 9. 7. which the Apoſtle makes the reaſon of the forgoing exhortation, of not *giving grudgingly, or as of neceſſity*, Verſe 6. And ſure 'tis no unreaſonable thing, that is herein required of us; there being no duty that has to humane nature more of pleaſure and delight, unleſs it be where covetouſneſs or cruelty have quite worked out the Man, and put a ravenous beaſt in his ſtead. Is it not a moſt raviſhing pleaſure to him that hath any bowels, to ſee the joy that a ſeaſonable alms brings to a poor wretch? How it revives and puts new ſpirits in him, that was even ſinking? Certainly the moſt ſenſual creature alive knows not how to beſtow his money on any thing, that ſhall bring him in ſo great a delight, and therefore methinks it ſhould be no hard matter to give not only without grudging, but even with a great deal of alacrity and chearfulneſs, it being the fetching in of pleaſure to our ſelves.

Manner of Alms-giving.

Chearfully.

6. There

The fear of impoveriſhing our ſelves by it, vain and impious.

6. There is but one Objection can be made againſt this, and that is, that the danger of impoveriſhing ones ſelf by what one gives may take off that pleaſure, and make Men either not give at all, or not ſo chearfully. To this I anſwer: That firſt, were this hazard never ſo apparent, yet it being the Command of God that we ſhall thus give, we are yet to obey chearfully, and be as well content to part with our goods in purſuance of this duty, as we are many times called to do upon ſome other. In which caſe Chriſt tells us, *He that forſakes not all that he hath, cannot be his Diſciple.*

7. But ſecondly, this is ſure a vain ſuppoſition, God having particularly promiſed the contrary to the Charitable; that it ſhall bring bleſſings on them, even in theſe outward things. *The liberal ſoul ſhall be made fat, and he that watereth ſhall be watered alſo himſelf*, Prov. 11. 25. *He that giveth to the poor ſhall not lack*, Prov. 28. 27. And many the like texts there are, ſo that one may truly ſay, this objection is grounded in direct unbelief. The ſhort of it is, we dare not truſt God for this. Giving to the poor is directly the putting our wealth into his hands. *He that giveth to the poor lendeth unto the Lord*, Prov. 19. 17. and that too on ſolemn promiſe of repayment, as it follows in that Verſe, *That which he hath given will he pay him again.* It is amongſt Men thought a great diſparagement, when we refuſe to truſt them; it ſhews we either think them not ſufficient, or not honeſt. How vile

an

an affront is it then to God thus to diſtruſt him? Nay, indeed, how horrid blaſphemy, to doubt the ſecurity of that, for which he has thus expreſly paſt his word, who is Lord of all, and therefore cannot be inſufficient, and who is the God of truth, and therefore will not fail to make good his promiſe? Let not then that infidel fear of future want, contract and ſhut up thy bowels from thy poor brother; for though he be never likely to pay thee, yet God becomes his Surety, and enters bond with him, and will moſt aſſuredly pay thee with increaſe. Therefore it is ſo far from being damage to thee, thus to give, that it is thy great advantage. Any man would rather chuſe to put his Money in ſome ſure hand, where he may both improve, and be certain of it at his need, than to let it lye unprofitable by him, eſpecially if he be in danger of thieves, or other accidents, by which he may probably loſe it. Now alas! all that we poſſeſs is in minutely danger of loſing; innumerable accidents there are, which may in an inſtant bring a rich man to beggary, he that doubts this, let him but read the ſtory of *Job*, and he will there find an example of it: And therefore what ſo prudent courſe can we take for our wealth, as to put it out of the reach of thoſe accidents, by thus lending it to God, where we may be ſure to find it ready at our greateſt need, and that too with improvement and encreaſe? In which reſpect it is that the Apoſtle compares Alms to ſeed, 2 *Cor.* 9. 10. We know it is the nature of Seed that is ſown, to multiply and increaſe, and ſo do all our acts of mercy, they return not ſingle

and

and naked to us, but bring in their ſheaves with them, a moſt plenteous and bountiful harveſt. God deals not with our Alms, as we too often do with his graces, wrap them up in a napkin, ſo that they ſhall never bring in any advantage to us, but makes us moſt rich returns: and therefore we have all reaſon moſt chearfully, yea, joyfully to ſet to this Duty, which we have ſuch invitations to, as well in reſpect of our own intereſts, as our neighbour's needs.

Give ſeaſonably.

8. Secondly, We muſt give ſeaſonably: it is true indeed there are ſome ſo poor, that an Alms can never come unſeaſonably, becauſe they always want, yet even to them their may be ſome ſpecial ſeaſons of doing it to their greater advantage; for ſometimes an Alms may not only deliver a poor Man from ſome preſent extremity, but by the right timing of it, may ſet him in ſome way of a more comfortable ſubſiſtence afterward. And for the moſt, I preſume it is a good Rule, to diſpenſe what we intend to any, as ſoon as may be, for delays are hurtful oftentimes both to them and our ſelves; firſt, as to them, it is ſure the longer we delay, the longer they groan under the preſent want, and after we have deſigned them a relief, it is in ſome degree a cruelty to defer beſtowing of it, for ſo long we prolong their ſufferings. You will think him a hard-hearted Phyſician, that having a certain cure for a Man in pain, ſhould, when he might preſently apply it, make unneceſſary delays, and ſo keep the poor Man ſtill in torture! and the ſame it is here: we want of the due compaſ-

ſion

sion, if we can be content our poor brother should have one hour of unnecessary suffering, when we have present opportunity of relieving him; or if he be not in such an extremity of want, yet whatever we intend him for his greater comfort, he loses so much of it, as the time of the delay amounts to. Secondly, in respect of our selves, 'tis ill to defer; for thereby we give advantage to the temptations either of Satan or our own covetous humour, to dissuade us from it. Thus it fares too often with many Christian duties; for want of a speedy execution, our purposes cool, and never come to act: so many resolve they will repent, but because they set not immediately upon it, one delay succeeds another, and keeps them from ever doing it at all; and so 'tis very apt to fall out in this case, especially with Men who are of a covetous temper, and therefore they of all others should not trust themselves thus to delay.

9. Thirdly, We should take care to give prudently, that is, to give most, where it is most needed, and in such a manner, as may do the receiver most good. Charities do often miscarry for want of this care, for if we give at all adventures to all that seem to want, we may sometimes give more to those, whose sloth and lewdness is the cause of their want, than to those who best deserve it, and so both encourage the one in their idleness, and disable our selves from giving to the other. Yet I doubt not such may be the present wants even of the most unworthy, that we are to relieve them: but where no such pressing *Prudently.*

ſing need is, we ſhall do beſt to chuſe out the fitter objects of charity, ſuch as are thoſe who either are not able to labour, or elſe have a greater charge than their labour can maintain, and to thoſe our alms ſhould be given alſo in ſuch manner as may be moſt likely to do them good: the manner of which may differ according to the circumſtances of their condition; it may to ſome be beſt perhaps, to give them by little and little, to others the giving it all at once may tend more to their benefit; and ſometimes a ſeaſonable loan may do as well as a gift, and that may be in the power ſometimes of thoſe who are able to give but little: but when we thus lend on charity, we muſt lend freely without Uſe, and alſo with a purpoſe that if he ſhould prove unable to pay, we will forgive ſo much of the Principal as his needs require and our abilities will permit. They want much of this charity, who clap up poor debtors in Priſon, when they know they have nothing to anſwer the debt, which is a great cruelty, to make another miſerable, when nothing is gained to our ſelves by it.

10. Fourthly, We ſhould give liberally, we muſt not be ſtrait-handed in our alms, and give by ſuch pitiful ſcantlings, as will bring almoſt no relief to the receiver, for that is a kind of mockery; 'tis as if one ſhould pretend to feed one that is almoſt famiſhed by giving him a crumb of bread; ſuch Doles as that would be moſt ridiculous, yet I fear 'tis too near the proportion of ſome Mens alms; ſuch Men are below thoſe Diſciples we read of, who knew only the Baptiſm of *John*, for 'tis to be obſerved, that

John

John Baptiſt, who was but the forerunner of Chriſt, makes it a ſpecial part of his doctrine, that he *that hath two coats ſhould impart to him that hath none*, *Luke* 3. 11. He ſays not, He that hath ſome great Wardrobe, but even he that hath but two coats muſt part with one of them; from whence we may gather, that whatſoever is above (not our vanity but) our need, ſhould thus be diſpoſed of, when our brethrens neceſſity requires it. But if we look into the firſt time of the Goſpel, we ſhall find Chriſtianity far exceeded this proportion of *John*'s; the converts aſſigned not a part only, but frankly *gave all to the uſe of the brethren*, *Acts* 4. And though that being upon an extraordinary occaſion, will be no meaſure of our conſtant practice, yet it may ſhew us how prime and fundamental a part of Chriſtianity, this of Charity is, that at the very firſt founding of the Church, ſuch vaſt degrees of it were practiſed; and if we farther conſider what precepts of love are given us in the Goſpel, even to the *laying down our lives for the brethren*, 1 *John* 3. 16. we cannot imagine our goods are in God's account ſo much more precious than our lives, that he would command us to be prodigal of the one, and yet allow us to be ſparing of the other.

11. A multitude of Arguments might be brought to recommend this bounty to all that profeſs Chriſt; I ſhall mention only two, which I find uſed by *S. Paul* to the *Corinthians* on this occaſion. The firſt is the example of Chriſt, 2 *Cor.* 8. 9. *For ye know the grace of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, who though he was rich, yet for your ſakes he became*

became poor, that ye through his poverty might be rich. Chriſt emptied himſelf of all that glory and greatneſs he enjoyed in Heaven with his Father, and ſubmitted himſelf to a life of much meanneſs and poverty, only to enrich us. And therefore for ſhame, let us not grudge to empty our Coffers, to leſſen ſomewhat of our heaps to relieve his poor members. The ſecond, is the expectation of reward, which will be more or leſs, according to the degrees of our Alms, 2 *Cor.* 9.6. *He that ſoweth ſparingly ſhall reap ſparingly, and he that ſoweth bountifully ſhall reap bountifully.* We think him a very improvident Husbandman that to ſave a little ſeed at preſent, ſows ſo thin, as to ſpoil his crop; and the ſame folly 'twill be in us, if by the ſparingneſs of our Alms, we make our ſelves a lank harveſt hereafter, loſe either all, or a great part of thoſe rewards which God hath provided for the liberal Almſ-giver. What is the proportion which may be called a liberal giving, I ſhall not undertake to ſet down, there being degrees even in liberality; one may give liberally, and yet another give more liberally than he; beſides, liberality is to be meaſured, not ſo much by what is given, as by the ability of the giver. A man of a mean eſtate may give leſs than one of a great, and yet be the more liberal perſon, becauſe that little may be more out of his, than the greater is out of the others. Thus we ſee Chriſt pronounces the poor Widow to *have given much more to the Treaſury, than all the rich men, Luke* 21. 3. not that her two mites were more than their rich gifts, but that it was more for her, ſhe having left nothing behind, where-

as

as they gave out of their abundance what they might eaſily ſpare. Every man muſt herein judge for himſelf; we ſee the Apoſtle, though he earneſtly preſs the *Corinthians* to bounty, yet preſcribes not to them how much they ſhall give, but leaves that to their own breaſts, 2 *Cor.* 9. 7. *Every man according as he purpoſeth in his heart, ſo let him give.* But let us ſtill remember that the more we give (provided we do not thereby fail in the ſupport of thoſe, that moſt immediately depend on us) the more acceptable it will be to God, and the more rewardable by him. And to ſecure the performance of the duty of Almſgiving (whatever the proportion be) we may do very well to follow the advice S. *Paul* gives the *Corinthians* in this matter, 1 *Cor.* 16. 2. *Upon the firſt day of the week let every one of you lay by him in ſtore as God hath proſpered him.* If men would do thus, lay by ſomewhat weekly in ſtore for this work of Charity, it were the ſureſt way not to be unprovided of ſomewhat to give, when an occaſion offered it ſelf, and by giving ſo by little and little, the expence would become leſs ſenſible, and ſo be a means to prevent thoſe grudgings and repinings, which are apt to attend Men in greater diſburſements; and ſure this were in other reſpects alſo a very proper courſe, for when a Tradeſman caſts up his weekly account, and ſees what his gains have been, 'tis of all others the moſt ſeaſonable time to offer this tribute to God out of what he hath by his bleſſing gained. If any will ſay they cannot ſo well weekly reckon their gains, as by longer ſpaces of time, I ſhall not contend with them for that preciſe

preciſe time, let it be done monthly or quarterly, ſo it be done. But that ſomewhat ſhould ſtill be laid by in bank for theſe uſes, rather than left looſe to our ſudden Charities is ſure very expedient; and I doubt not, whoever will make trial of it, will upon experience acknowledge it to be ſo.

Charity in reſpect of the Credit.

12. The fourth exerciſe of our Charity is towards the credit of our neighbour: and of this we may have many occaſions; ſometimes towards the innocent, and ſometimes alſo towards the guilty. If one whom we know to be an innocent perſon, be ſlandered, and traduced, Charity binds us to do what we may for the declaring his innocency, and delivering him from that falſe imputation, and that not only by witneſſing when we are called to it, but by a voluntary offering our teſtimony on his behalf, or if the accuſation be not before a Court of Juſtice, and ſo there be no place for that our more ſolemn teſtimony, but that it be only a ſlander toſt from one to another, yet even there we are to do what we can to clear him, by taking all occaſions publickly to declare what we know of his innocency. But even to the guilty there is ſome Charity of this kind to be performed, ſometimes by concealing the fault, if it be ſuch that no other part of Charity to others make it neceſſary to diſcover it, or it be not ſo notorious, as that it will be ſure to betray it ſelf. The wounds of Reputation are of all others the moſt incurable, and therefore it may well become Chriſtian Charity to prevent them, even where

where they have been deſerved; and perhaps ſuch a tenderneſs in hiding the fault may ſooner bring the offender to Repentance, if it be ſeconded (as it ought to be) with all earneſtneſs of private admonition: But if the fault be ſuch, that it be not to be concealed, yet ſtill there may be place for this Charity, in extenuating and leſſening it, as far as the circumſtances will bear: As if it were done ſuddenly and raſhly, Charity will allow ſome abatement of the Cenſure, which would belong to a deſigned and deliberate Act; and ſo proportionably in other circumſtances. But the moſt frequent exerciſes of this Charity happen towards thoſe, of whoſe either innocency or guilt we have no knowledge, but are by ſome doubtful actions brought under ſuſpicion: And here we muſt remember, that it is the property of love not to think evil, to judge the beſt; and therefore we are both to abſtain from uncharitable concluſions of them our ſelves, and as much as lies in us, to keep others from them alſo, and ſo endeavour to preſerve the credit of our neighbour; which is oftentimes as much ſhaken by unjuſt ſuſpicions, as it would be by the trueſt accuſation. To theſe Caſes, I ſuppoſe, belongs that precept of Chriſt, *Mat.* 7. 1. *Judge not*: and when we conſider how that is backt in the following words, *That ye be not judged*, we ſhall have cauſe to believe it no ſuch light matter as the World ſeems to account it; our unmerciful judging of others will be paid home to us, in the ſtrict and ſevere Judgment of God.

The acts of Charity in ſome reſpects acts of Juſtice alſo.

13. I have now gone through this Active Charity, as it relates to the four ſeveral capacities of our brethren, many of the particulars whereof were before briefly mentioned, when we ſpake of Juſtice. If any think it improper, that the ſame acts ſhould be made part of Juſtice and Charity too, I ſhall deſire them to conſider, that Charity being by Chriſt's command become a debt to our brethren, all the parts of it may in that reſpect be ranked under the head of Juſtice, ſince 'tis ſure, paying of debts is a part of that: Yet becauſe in our common uſe we do diſtinguiſh between the offices of Juſtice and Charity, I have choſe to enlarge on them in particular reference to Charity. But I deſire it may ſtill be remembred, that whatſoever is under precept, is ſo much a due from us, that we ſin not only againſt Charity, but Juſtice too, if we neglect it; which deſerves to be conſidered, the more to ſtir up our care to the performance, and the rather, becauſe there ſeems to be a common error in this point. Men look upon their Acts of mercy, as things purely voluntary, that they have no Obligation to; and the effect of it is this, that they are apt to think very highly of themſelves, when they have performed any, though never ſo mean, but never blame themſelves, though they omit all: which is a very dangerous, but withal a very natural fruit of the former perſwaſion. If there be any Charities wherein Juſtice is not concern'd, they are thoſe which for the height and

and degrees of them are not made matter of ſtrict Duty, that is, are not in thoſe degrees commanded by God: and even after theſe, 'twill be very reaſonable for us to labour; but that cannot be done without taking the lower and neceſſary degrees in our way; and therefore let our firſt care be for them.

The great rule of Charity.

14. To help us wherein there will be no better means, than to keep before our eyes that grand rule *of Loving our Neighbours as our ſelves:* this the Apoſtle makes the ſumm of our Whole duty to our Neighbours, *Rom.* 13. 9. Let this therefore be the ſtandard, whereby to meaſure all thy actions, which relate to others; whenever any neceſſity of thy Neighbours preſents it ſelf to thee, ask thy ſelf, whether, if thou wert in the like caſe, thy love to thy ſelf would not make thee induſtrious for relief, and then reſolve thy love to thy Neighbour muſt have the ſame effect for him. This is that Royal Law, as S. *James* calls it, *Jam.* 2. 8. which all that profeſs themſelves ſubjects to Chriſt, muſt be ruled by; and whoſoever is ſo, will not fail of performing all charities to others, becauſe 'tis ſure he would upon the like occaſions have all ſuch performed to himſelf. There is none but wiſhes to have his good name defended, his poverty relieved, his bodily ſuffering ſuccoured; only it may be ſaid, that in the ſpiritual wants, there are ſome ſo careleſs of themſelves, that they wiſh no ſupply, they deſire no reproofs, no inſtructions, nay, are angry when they are given them; it may therefore

ſeem that ſuch Men are not by vertue of this rule tied to thoſe ſorts of Charities. To this I anſwer, That the love of our ſelves, which is here ſet as the meaſure of that to our Neighbour, is to be underſtood to be that reaſonable love, which Men ought to have, and therefore though a Man fail of that due love he ows himſelf, yet his Neighbour hath not thereby forfeited his right, he has ſtill a claim to ſuch a degree of our love, as is anſwerable to that, which in right we ſhould bear to our ſelves, and ſuch I am ſure is this care of our ſpiritual eſtate, and therefore 'tis not our deſpiſing our own Souls, that will abſolve us from Charity to other Mens: yet I ſhall not much preſs this duty in ſuch Men, it being neither likely that they will be perſwaded to it, or do any good by it, their ill example will over-whelm all their good exhortations, and make them unfruitful.

Peace-making.

15. There is yet one Act of Charity behind, which does not properly fall under any one of the former heads, and yet may relate to them all, and that is, the making peace and amity among others; by doing whereof we may much benefit both the Souls, Bodies, Goods and Credit of our brethren; for all theſe are in danger by ſtrife and contention. The reconciling of enemies is a moſt bleſſed work, and brings a bleſſing on the Actors: We have Chriſt's word for it, *Bleſſed are the peace-makers*, *Matth.* 5. 9. and therefore we may be encouraged diligently to lay hold of all opportunities of doing this office of Charity, to uſe all our Art and endeavour

to

to take up all grudges and quarrels we diſcern among others; neither muſt we only labour to reſtore peace where it is loſt, but to preſerve it where it is: Firſt, generally, by ſtriving to beget in the hearts of all we converſe with a true value of that moſt precious Jewel, Peace; Secondly, particularly, by a timely prevention of thoſe jars and unkindneſſes, we ſee likely to fall out. It may many times be in the power of a diſcreet friend or neighbour, to cure thoſe miſtakes and miſapprehenſions, which are the firſt beginnings of quarrels and contentions; and it will be both more eaſie and more profitable, thus to prevent, than pacifie ſtrifes. 'Tis ſure 'tis more eaſie, for when a quarrel is once broken out, 'tis like a violent flame, which cannot ſo ſoon be quencht, as it might have been, whileſt it was but a ſmothering fire. And then 'tis alſo more profitable, for it prevents many ſins, which in the progreſs of an open contention, are almoſt ſure to be committed. *Solomon* ſays, *In the multitude of words there wanteth not ſin*, *Prov.* 10. 19. which cannot more truly be ſaid of any ſort of words, than thoſe that paſs in anger, and then, though the quarrel be afterwards compoſed, yet thoſe ſins will ſtill remain on their account; and therefore it is a great Charity to prevent them.

He that undertakes it, muſt be peaceable himſelf.

16. But to fit a Man for this ſo excellent an Office of Peace-making, 'tis neceſſary that he be firſt remarkably peaceable himſelf; for with what face canſt thou perſwade

others to that which thou wilt not perform thy ſelf? Or how canſt thou expect thy perſwaſions ſhould work? 'Twill be a ready reply in every Man's mouth, *Thou Hypocrite, caſt out firſt the beam out of thine own eye, Matth.* 7.5. and therefore be ſure thou qualifie thy ſelf for the work. There is one point of Peaceableneſs which ſeems to be little regarded among Men, and that is in the Caſe of Legal treſpaſſes; Men think it nothing to go to Law about every petty trifle, and as long as they have but Law on their ſide, never think they are to blame: but ſure had we that true peaceableneſs of ſpirit which we ought, we ſhould be unwilling for ſuch ſlight matters to trouble and diſquiet our Neighbours. Not that all going to Law is utterly unchriſtian, but ſuch kind of Suits eſpecially, as are upon contentiouſneſs, and ſtoutneſs of humour, to defend ſuch an inconſiderable right as the parting with will do us little or no harm, or which is yet worſe, to avenge ſuch a treſpaſs. And even in great matters, he that ſhall part with ſomewhat of his right for love of Peace, does ſurely the moſt Chriſtianly, and moſt agreeably to the advice of the Apoſtle, 1 *Cor.* 6. 7. *Rather to take wrong, and ſuffer our ſelves to be defrauded.* But if the damage be ſo unſupportable, that it is neceſſary for us to go to Law, yet even then we muſt take care of preſerving Peace; firſt, by carrying ſtill a friendly and Chriſtian temper towards the party, not ſuffering our hearts to be at all eſtranged from him: ſecondly, by being willing to yield to any reaſonable terms of

Of going to Law.

of agreement, whenever they ſhall be offered; and truly if we carry not this temper of mind in our ſuits, I ſee not how they can be reconcileable with that peaceableneſs ſo ſtrictly required of all Chriſtians. Let thoſe conſider this who make it their pleaſure themſelves to diſquiet their Neighbour, or their trade to ſtir up others to do it. This tender regard of Peace both in our ſelves, and others, is abſolutely neceſſary to be entertained of all thoſe, who own themſelvs to be the ſervants of him, whoſe title it is to be the *Prince of Peace, Iſa. 9. 6.*

This charity of the actions muſt reach to Enemies.

17. All that remains to be toucht on concerning this Charity of the Actions, is the extent of it, which muſt be as large as the former of the Affections, even to the taking in, not only ſtrangers, and thoſe of no relation to us, but even of our bittereſt enemies. I have already ſpoken ſo much of the Obligation we are under to forgive them, that I ſhall not here ſay any thing of that, but that being ſuppoſed a Duty, 'twill ſure then appear no unreaſonable thing to proceed one ſtep further, by doing them good turns: for when we have once forgiven them, we can then no longer account them enemies, and ſo 'twill be no hard matter even to fleſh and bloud to do all kind things to them. And indeed this is the way, by which we muſt try the ſincerity of our forgiveneſs. 'Tis eaſie to ſay, I forgive ſuch a Man, but if when an opportunity of doing him good is offered, thou declineſt it, 'tis apparent there yet lurks the old

malice in thy heart, where there is a through forgiveneſs, there will be as great a readineſs to benefit an enemy as a friend; nay, perhaps in ſome reſpects a greater, a true charitable perſon looking upon it as an eſpecial prize, when he has an opportunity of evidencing the truth of his reconciliation, and obeying the precept of his Saviour, by *doing good to them that hate him*, *Matt.* 5. 44. Let us therefore reſolve that all actions of kindneſs are to be performed to our enemies, for which we have not only the command, but alſo the example of Chriſt, who had not only ſome inward relentings towards us his obſtinate and moſt provoking enemies, but ſhewed it in acts, and thoſe no cheap or eaſie ones, but ſuch as coſt him his deareſt bloud. And ſurely we can never pretend to be either obeyers of his Command, or followers of his Example, if we grudge to teſtifie our loves to our Enemies by thoſe ſo much cheaper ways *of feeding them in hunger*, and the like, recommended to us by the Apoſtle, *Rom.* 12. 20. But if we could perform theſe acts of kindneſs to enemies in ſuch manner as might draw them from their enmity, and win them to Peace, the Charity would be doubted; And this we ſhould aim at, for that we ſee the Apoſtle ſets as the end of the forementioned acts of feeding, *&c.* that we may *heap coals of fire on their heads*, not coals to burn, but to melt them into all love and tenderneſs towards us; and this were indeed the moſt compleat way of imitating Chriſt's example, who in all he did and ſuffered for us, deſigned the reconciling of us to himſelf.

18. I have now ſhewed you the ſeveral parts of our duty to our Neighbour, towards the performance whereof I know nothing more neceſſary, than the turning out of our hearts that ſelf-love which ſo often poſſeſſes them; and that ſo wholly, that it leaves no room for Charity, nay, nor Juſtice neither to our Neighbour. By this ſelf-love I mean not that true love of our ſelves, which is the love and care of our Souls (for that would certainly help, not hinder us in this duty) but I mean that immoderate love of our own worldly intereſts, and advantages, which is apparently the root of all both injuſtice and uncharitableneſs towards others. We find this ſin of ſelf-love ſet by the Apoſtle in the head of a whole troop of ſins, 2 *Tim.* 3.2. as if it were ſome principal officer in Satan's camp; and certainly, not without reaſon, for it never goes without an accurſed train of many other ſins, which like the Dragon's tail, *Rev.* 12.4. ſweeps away all care of duty to others. We are by it made ſo vehement and intent upon the pleaſing our ſelves, that we have no regard to any body elſe, contrary to the direction of S. *Paul*, *Rom.* 15.2. which is not to pleaſe our ſelves, *But every man to pleaſe his Neighbour for his good to edification*; which he backs with the example of Chriſt, Verſe 3. *For even Chriſt pleaſed not himſelf:* If therefore we have any ſincere deſire to have this vertue of charity rooted in our hearts, we muſt be careful to weed out this ſin of ſelf-love, for 'tis impoſſible they can proſper together.

Self-love an hindrance to this Charity.

Prayer a means to procure it.

19. But when we have removed this hindrance, we must remember that this, as all other graces, proceeds not from our selves, it is the gift of God, and therefore we must earnestly pray to him to work it in us, to send his holy Spirit, which once appeared in the form of a Dove, a meek and gall-less creature, to frame our hearts to the same temper, and enable us rightly to perform this duty.

Christian Duties both possible and pleasant.

20. I Have now past through those several Branches I at first proposed, and shewed you what is our Duty to God, our Selves, and our Neighbour: Of which I may say as it is, *Luk.*10. 28. *This do and thou shalt live.* And surely it is no impossible task to perform this in such a measure, as God will graciously accept, that is, in Sincerity, though not in Perfection, for God is not that austere Master, *Luke* 19. 20. *that reaps where he has not sown*, he requires nothing of us, which he is not ready by his Grace to enable us to perform, if we be not wanting to our selves, either in asking it by Prayer, or in using it by Diligence. And as it is not impossible, so neither is it such a sad melancholy task, as Men are apt to think it. 'Tis a special policy of Satan's, to do as the Spies did, *Numb.*23.28. *Bring up an ill report upon this good Land*, this state of Christian life, thereby to discourage us from entring into it, to fright us with I know not what Gyants we shall meet with; but let us not thus be cheated,

cheated, let us but take the courage to try, and we ſhall indeed find it a *Canaan, a Land flowing with milk and honey:* God is not in this reſpect to his People *a wilderneſs, a Land of darkneſs, Jer.* 2. 31 His Service does not bereave Men of any true joy, but helps them to a great deal: Chriſt's yoke is an eaſie, nay, a pleaſant yoke, his burden a light, yea a gracious burden. There is in the Practice of Chriſtian Duties a great deal of preſent pleaſure, and if we feel it not, it is becauſe of the reſiſtance our vicious and ſinful cuſtoms make, which by the contention raiſes an uneaſineſs. But then firſt, that is to be charged only on our ſelves, for having got thoſe ill cuſtoms, and thereby made that hard to us, which in it ſelf is moſt pleaſant, the Duties are not to be accuſed for it. And then ſecondly, even there the pleaſure of ſubduing thoſe ill habits, overcoming thoſe corrupt cuſtoms is ſuch, as hugely outweigheth all the trouble of the combate.

Even when they expoſe us to outward ſufferings.

21. But it will perhaps be ſaid that ſome parts of piety are of ſuch a nature, as will be very apt to expoſe us to perſecutions and ſufferings in the World, and that thoſe are not joyous but grievous.

I anſwer, that even in thoſe there is matter of joy. We ſee the Apoſtles thought it ſo, *They rejoyced that they were counted worthy to ſuffer for Chriſt's name*, Acts 4. 41. And *S. Peter* tells us, *That if any ſuffer as a Chriſtian, he is to glorifie God for it*, 1 *Pet.* 4. 16. There is ſuch a force and

vertue in the teſtimony of a good Conſcience, as is able to change the greateſt ſuffering into the greateſt triumph, and that teſtimony we can never have more clear and lively, than when we ſuffer for righteouſneſs ſake; ſo that you ſee Chriſtianity is very amiable even in its ſaddeſt dreſs, the inward comforts of it do far ſurpaſs all the outward tribulations that attend it, and that even in the inſtant, while we are in the ſtate of warfare upon Earth. But then if we look forward to the crown of our victories, thoſe eternal rewards in Heaven, we can never think thoſe tasks ſad, though we had nothing at preſent to ſweeten them, that have ſuch recompences await them at the end, were our labours never ſo heavy, we could have no cauſe to faint under them. Let us therefore whenever we meet with any diſcouragements in our courſe, fix our eye on this rich prize, and then *run with patience the race which is ſet before us*, *Heb.* 12. 2. Follow the Captain of our Salvation through the greateſt ſufferings, yea, even through the ſame red ſea of bloud which he hath waded, whenever our Obedience to him ſhall require it; for though our fidelity to him ſhould bring us to death it ſelf, we are ſure to be no loſers by it, for to ſuch he hath promiſed a crown of life, the very expectation whereof is able to keep a Chriſtian more chearful in his fetters and dungeon, than a worldling can be in the midſt of his greateſt proſperities.

22. All that remains for me farther to add, is earneſtly to intreat and beſeech the Reader, that without delay, he put himſelf into this ſo pleaſant and gainful a courſe, by ſetting ſincerely to the practice of all thoſe things, which either by this Book, or by any other means he diſcerns to be his Duty, and the further he hath formerly gone out of his way, the more haſte it concerns him to make to get into it, and to uſe the more diligence in walking in it. He that hath a long journey to go, and finds he hath loſt a great part of his day in a wrong way, will not need much intreaty, either to turn into the right, or to quicken his pace in it. And this is the caſe of all thoſe that have lived in any courſe of ſin, they are in a wrong road, which will never bring them to the place they aim at; nay, which will certainly bring them to the place they moſt fear and abhor; much of their day is ſpent, how much will be left to finiſh their journey in, none knows, perhaps the next hour, the next minute, the night of death may overtake them; what a madneſs is it then for them to defer one moment to turn out of that Path which leads to certain deſtruction, and to put themſelves in that, which will bring them to bliſs and glory? Yet ſo are Men bewitched and enchanted with the Deceitfulneſs of ſin, that no intreaty, no perſwaſion can prevail with them, to make this ſo reaſonable, ſo neceſſary a change; not but that they acknowledge it needful to be done, but they are unwilling to do it yet, they would enjoy all the pleaſures

The danger of delaying our turning to God.

pleaſures of ſin as long as they live, and then they hope at their death, or ſome little time before it, to do all the buſineſs of their Souls. But alas! Heaven is too high to be thus jumpt into, the way to it is a long and leiſurely aſcent, which requires time to walk. The hazards of ſuch deferring are more largely ſpoken of in the Diſcourſe of Repentance: I ſhall not here repeat them, but deſire the Reader ſeriouſly to lay them to heart, and then ſurely he will think it ſeaſonable Counſel that is given by the Wiſe man, *Eccluſ. 5. 7. Make no tarrying to turn to the Lord, and put not off from day to day.*

FINIS.

Richard Etherington

Robert Shaw